## Library Declaration and Deposit Agreement

## 1. STUDENT DETAILS

Shannon Horrigan
1206755

## 2. THESIS DEPOSIT

2.1 I understand that under my registration at the University, I am required to deposit my thesis with the University in BOTH hard copy and in digital format. The digital version should normally be saved as a single pdf file.
2.2 The hard copy will be housed in the University Library. The digital version will be deposited in the University's Institutional Repository (WRAP). Unless otherwise indicated (see 2.3 below) this will be made openly accessible on the Internet and will be supplied to the British Library to be made available online via its Electronic Theses Online Service (EThOS) service. [At present, theses submitted for a Master's degree by Research (MA, MSc, LLM, MS or MMedSci) are not being deposited in WRAP and not being made available via EthOS. This may change in future.]
2.3 In exceptional circumstances, the Chair of the Board of Graduate Studies may grant permission for an embargo to be placed on public access to the hard copy thesis for a limited period. It is also possible to apply separately for an embargo on the digital version. (Further information is available in the Guide to Examinations for Higher Degrees by Research.)
2.4 (a) Hard Copy I hereby deposit a hard copy of my thesis in the University Library to be made publicly available to readers immediately.
I agree that my thesis may be photocopied.
(b) Digital Copy I hereby deposit a digital copy of my thesis to be held in WRAP and made available via EThOS. My thesis can be made publicly available online.

## 3. GRANTING OF NON-EXCLUSIVE RIGHTS

Whether I deposit my Work personally or through an assistant or other agent, I agree to the following: Rights granted to the University of Warwick and the British Library and the user of the thesis through this agreement are non-exclusive. I retain all rights in the thesis in its present version or future versions. I agree that the institutional repository administrators and the British Library or their agents may, without changing content, digitise and migrate the thesis to any medium or format for the purpose of future preservation and accessibility.

## 4. DECLARATIONS

(a) I DECLARE THAT:

- I am the author and owner of the copyright in the thesis and/or I have the authority of the authors and owners of the copyright in the thesis to make this agreement. Reproduction of any part of this thesis for teaching or in academic or other forms of publication is subject to the normal limitations on the use of copyrighted materials and to the proper and full acknowledgement of its source.
- The digital version of the thesis I am supplying is the same version as the final, hardbound copy submitted in completion of my degree, once any minor corrections have been completed.
- I have exercised reasonable care to ensure that the thesis is original, and does not to the best of my knowledge break any UK law or other Intellectual Property Right, or contain any confidential material.
- I understand that, through the medium of the Internet, files will be available to automated agents, and may be searched and copied by, for example, text mining and plagiarism detection software.
(b) IF I HAVE AGREED (in Section 2 above) TO MAKE MY THESIS PUBLICLY AVAILABLE DIGITALLY, I ALSO DECLARE THAT:
- I grant the University of Warwick and the British Library a licence to make available on the Internet the thesis in digitised format through the Institutional Repository and through the British Library via the EThOS service.
- If my thesis does include any substantial subsidiary material owned by third-party copyright holders, I have sought and obtained permission to include it in any version of my thesis available in digital format and that this permission encompasses the rights that I have granted to the University of Warwick and to the British Library.


## 5. LEGAL INFRINGEMENTS

I understand that neither the University of Warwick nor the British Library have any obligation to take legal action on behalf of myself, or other rights holders, in the event of infringement of intellectual property rights, breach of contract or of any other right, in the thesis.

Please sign this agreement and return it to the Graduate School Office when you submit your thesis.

```
Student's signature:
Date:
```

Mathematics and Statistics Centre for Doctoral Training

# Continuum Random Cluster and Potts 

 models with Delaunay interactionsby

## Shannon Horrigan

Thesis

Submitted to the University of Warwick
for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

## Department of Mathematics



## Contents

Acknowledgments ..... iii
Declarations ..... iv
Abstract ..... v
Chapter 1 Introduction ..... 1
Chapter 2 Preliminaries ..... 5
2.1 Gibbsian point processes with geometry-dependent interactions ..... 5
2.1.1 Point configurations ..... 5
2.1.2 Hypergraphs and hyperedge interactions ..... 7
2.1.3 Gibbs measures ..... 8
2.1.4 Pseudo-periodic configurations ..... 10
2.1.5 Existence ..... 10
2.2 Delaunay continuum Potts measures ..... 13
2.3 The random cluster representation ..... 16
2.3.1 Hyperedge percolation models ..... 16
2.3.2 Background and type interactions ..... 18
2.3.3 The Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution ..... 19
2.3.4 The random cluster representation measure ..... 21
2.3.5 Phase transitions, symmetry breaking and connectivity ..... 22
2.3.6 Hyperedge percolation to site percolation ..... 24
2.4 Mixed site-bond percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$ ..... 27
2.5 Previous results for Delaunay interactions ..... 30
Chapter 3 Delaunay Potts models with triangle interactions ..... 33
3.1 Definitions ..... 33
3.2 Results ..... 34
3.3 Existence proof ..... 35
3.4 Phase transition proof ..... 39
3.4.1 Augmenting a configuration by a particle ..... 39
3.4.2 Coarse graining ..... 44
3.4.3 Percolation of $\mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}$. ..... 47
Chapter 4 Infinite Volume Delaunay Random Cluster Measures ..... 54
4.1 Preliminaries ..... 55
4.1.1 Sample spaces and sigma algebras ..... 55
4.1.2 Properties of Delaunay triangulations ..... 56
4.2 Definitions ..... 60
4.2.1 The reference measure ..... 60
4.2.2 The local number of connected components ..... 61
4.2.3 Delaunay random cluster measures ..... 63
4.3 Existence result ..... 67
4.4 Proof ..... 68
4.4.1 Local convergence and the specific entropy ..... 69
4.4.2 Existence of an accumulation point ..... 77
4.4.3 A second converging sequence ..... 83
4.4.4 Uniqueness of the infinite connected component ..... 84
4.4.5 The DLR equations ..... 90
Chapter 5 Outlook ..... 97
Appendix A ..... 99

## Acknowledgments

I would like to acknowledge my supervisor Stefan Adams for his invaluable support and guidance throughout my studies, as well as the EPSRC for their financial support. I would also like to thank my friends and family for their help and support, in particular Eleanor Archer, Beth Fiducia-Brookes, George Vasdekis and Quirin Vogel.

## Declarations

I hereby declare that this thesis is a product of my own work and the ideas discussed with my supervisor, Dr Stefan Adams, unless specifically referenced or cited otherwise and it is in accordance with the university's guidelines on plagiarism. I also declare that it has not been submitted for any other degree or qualification at this or any other university.

## Abstract

In this thesis we study a class of marked Gibbsian point processes with geometry dependent interactions known as Delaunay Potts models. We use a random cluster representation to show that a phase transition occurs in one such model for which the interactions depend on the geometry of the triangles which make up the Delaunay triangulation. The random cluster representation relates the finite volume Gibbs distribution to a hyperedge percolation model called the Delaunay random cluster model. We subsequently show that an infinite volume Delaunay random cluster model, as defined by the standard DLR formalism, exists when the potential satisfies two hard-core conditions and the edge weights are uniformly bounded away from 0 and 1.

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

The goal of equilibrium statistical mechanics is to explain the macroscopic behaviour of physical systems in thermodynamic equilibrium in terms of the interactions between its microscopic elements. The concept of a Gibbs measure was introduced independently by Dobrushin [Dob68] and Lanford and Ruelle [LR69] as a mathematical description of an equilibrium state of a system consisting of a large number of interacting components. Many physical systems exhibit phase transitions in which the system moves from one equilibrium state to another, such as the magnetisation of a ferromagnetic metal such as iron, or the transition of a real gas from liquid to vapour. This phenomenon should manifest in our mathematical model through the existence of multiple Gibbs measures. If this is the case, we say that the model exhibits a phase transition.

The first model of a system of locally interacting particles in which phase transition was shown to occur is called the Ising model. It was introduced in 1920 by Wilhelm Lenz, with the hope of obtaining an understanding of ferromagnetic behaviour. In the Ising model each vertex of a lattice is envisaged as a particle and randomly assigned a 'spin' value of -1 or 1 representing its magnetic moment, with interactions between particles which favour the agreement of neighbouring spins. In dimensions $d \geq 2$ there is a critical temperature below which the interactions are strong enough that the magnetic moments can align and one of the two spin types dominates the other.

The $q$-state Potts model for $q \in \mathbb{N}$ is a generalisation of the Ising model where the spin value assigned to a particle (now called its 'type') can take any value in the set $\{1, \ldots, q\}$. This model exhibits a similar break of symmetry as
the Ising model; there is a critical temperature below which particles of one type dominate the others. This results in the existence of $q$ distinct Gibbs measures. This result for the Potts model was proven using the Fortuin-Kasteleyn representation in which the $q$-state Potts model is coupled with a bond percolation model on $\mathbb{Z}^{d}$ called the random cluster model with the same parameter $q$. The random cluster model is a generalisation of the Bernoulli bond percolation model with an additional weighting applied to each configuration depending on the parameter $q$ and the number of connected components the configuration has. Using this representation it is shown that percolation in the random cluster model coincides with the existence of multiple Gibbs measures in the Potts model.

The study of phase transitions is one of the main subjects of statistical mechanics, but even so, most models which are known to exhibit a phase transition are discrete like the two discussed above. We are interested here in the existence of phase transitions in continuum particle systems. Notable examples of phase transitions in the continuous setting include a gas-liquid phase transition [LMP99] and the spontaneous breaking of rotational symmetry in a simple model of a two dimensional crystal without defects for small temperatures [MR09]. Phase transitions are also established in [GH96] for a class of continuum multi-type particle systems (continuum Potts models) in $\mathbb{R}^{d}$ for $d \geq 2$ with a finite range repulsive pair interaction between particles of different types. This class includes the Widom-Rowlinson model. The approach taken by the authors involves a random cluster representation analogous to the Fortuin-Kasteleyn representation in the discrete case. Percolation in the relevant random cluster model then implies the existence of multiple Gibbs measures. In [AE16] the particle interaction from [GH96] between unlike particles was replaced by an interaction based on the geometry of the Delaunay graph with a hard-core background potential depending on the lengths of the Delaunay edges. Both edge and triangle-dependent interactions were considered, and a random cluster representation was used in the proof. In a continuation [AE19] the authors also obtained a phase transition result with no background potential and finite range interaction depending on the lengths of the Delaunay edges. In chapter 3 we use the same approach to prove that a phase transition occurs (for certain choices of the model parameters) in a
model in which both the background interaction and the interaction between unlike particles depends on the geometry of the Delaunay triangles. We again use a random cluster representation.

The random cluster representation we use in chapter 3 couples the finite volume Gibbs distribution in $\Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ (which we call the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution in $\Delta$ ) with the Delaunay random cluster distribution in $\Delta$. This coupling is restricted to the case when the former has a boundary condition made up of particles of the same type, which corresponds to a Delaunay random cluster distribution with a 'wired' boundary condition in which all hyperedges sufficiently far away from $\Delta$ are open. In chapter 4 we propose the study of a set of measures called Delaunay random cluster measures. These are percolation measures defined using the DLR formalism in the same way that Gibbs measures are defined from finite volume Gibbs distributions. This entails first extending the definition of the finite volume Delaunay random cluster distributions to allow for arbitrary boundary conditions, which is nontrivial since it is possible that the number of infinite connected components is infinite. The main result of chapter 4 is the existence of Delaunay random cluster measures under certain conditions.

The investigation in chapter 4 is motivated by the prospect of a random cluster representation connecting the Delaunay random cluster measures and the Gibbs measures arising from the Delaunay continuum Potts distributions (much like the representation coupling the finite volume distributions themselves). A random cluster representation of this nature might allow us to prove that for some choices of parameters the Gibbs measures are unique. This approach was successful in when applied to the Widom-Rowlinson model and the infinite volume (Boolean) random cluster model. In [DH15] the existence of infinite volume random cluster measures was shown and a random cluster representation was introduced. This representation was subsequently leveraged to show that the Widom-Rowlinson model is unique for small activities using disagreement percolation [HTH19].

This thesis will proceed as follows. In chapter 2 we introduce the necessary definitions and notation that will be used throughout, and in particular we introduce Delaunay continuum Potts measures and the finite volume Delaunay random cluster distributions. We recap the existence result from [DDG12] and
the construction of the random cluster representation, which mostly follows [Eye14]. We then explore how the random cluster representation provides a connection between phase transitions and connectivity, before proving a short technical result regarding mixed site-bond percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$ and summarising the literature on Delaunay continuum Potts models. In chapter 3 we apply these results to a model in which the interactions depend on the geometry of the Delaunay triangles. We prove that Gibbs measures exist for large values of the activity parameter and that a phase transition occurs if both the activity and the parameter $\beta$, which controls the strength of the interaction, are sufficiently large. We then move on in chapter 4 and show that an infinite volume Delaunay random cluster measure exists if the background potential satisfies two hard-core conditions and the edge weights are uniformly bounded away from 0 and 1. Finally, in chapter 5 we discuss possibilities for future research.

## Chapter 2

## Preliminaries

### 2.1 Gibbsian point processes with geometrydependent interactions

We begin with a presentation of the framework, introduced in [DDG12], for studying Gibbsian point processes with hypergraph interactions. The framework allows for the study of a wide class of interactions which depend on the local geometry of configurations. The interactions were are interested in fall into this class as they depend on the local geometry of the Delaunay triangulation associated to each configuration. Furthermore, we present the main result from [DDG12], which gives necessary conditions under which a Gibbs measure exists.

### 2.1.1 Point configurations

We consider systems of particles in $\mathbb{R}^{d}$, both in the case where the particles are described by their spatial location only, and where the particles possess a mark describing their type or internal degrees of freedom. In the latter case the marks belong to a mark space, $Q$, and each marked point lies in the set $\mathbb{R}^{d} \times Q$. We shall focus on marked point processes with mark space $Q=[q]:=\{1, \ldots, q\}$ for some $q \in \mathbb{N}$, which are broadly known as Potts models. It is worth noting however that the existence results of [DDG12] do in fact hold for any mark space which is standard Borel. The set of point configurations $\Omega$ is defined to
be the set of locally finite subsets of $\mathbb{R}^{d}$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega:=\left\{\omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}:|\omega \cap \Delta|<\infty \text { for all } \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}\right\} \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ denotes the fact that $\Delta$ is a bounded Borel subset of $\mathbb{R}^{d}$. A marked point configuration is a subset $\boldsymbol{\omega} \subset \mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]$ whose projection $\omega$ onto the spatial coordinate is locally finite. The set of marked point configurations is therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Omega}:=\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \subset \mathbb{R}^{2} \times[q]: \omega \in \Omega\right\} . \tag{2.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ has an associated mark function $\sigma_{\omega} \in[q]^{\omega}$ which retrieves the mark of a point given its position, i.e $\sigma_{\omega}(x)=i$ if $(x, i) \in \omega$. A marked configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ can therefore be represented as a pair $\left(\omega, \sigma_{\omega}\right)$.

For each Borel set $B \subset \mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]$, the counting variable $N_{B}: \boldsymbol{\omega} \mapsto|\boldsymbol{\omega} \cap B|$ on $\boldsymbol{\Omega}$ gives the number of marked points in $B$. Similarly, for each Borel set $\Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$, we define the counting variable $N_{\Delta}: \omega \mapsto|\omega \cap \Delta|$ on $\Omega$. The spaces $\Omega$ and $\Omega$ are equipped with the $\sigma$-algebras $\mathcal{F}:=\sigma\left(N_{\Delta}: \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}\right)$ and $\mathcal{F}:=\sigma\left(N_{B}: B \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]\right)$ respectively. $\mathcal{F}$ is the Borel $\sigma$-algebra for the Polish topology which is generated by the variables $\boldsymbol{\omega} \mapsto \int g \mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}$, where $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ is interpreted as a counting measure on $\mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]$ and $g: \mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is bounded and continuous with spatially bounded support (see [MKM78]). The analogous statement is true for $\mathcal{F}$, and so $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ and $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \mathcal{F})$ are standard Borel spaces. The reference measures on the spaces $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ and $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ are the Poisson point processes $\Pi^{z}$ and $\Pi^{z}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{d}$ and $\mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]$ with intensity measures $z$ Leb and $z \mathrm{Leb} \otimes U$ respectively, where $z>0$ is a parameter known as the activity, Leb denotes the Lebesgue measure on $\mathbb{R}^{d}$ and $U$ denotes the uniform measure on $[q]$. In particular, for $B \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d} \times[q]$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}$ we have

$$
\Pi^{z}\left(N_{B}=n\right)=\frac{(z \operatorname{Leb} \otimes U(B))^{n}}{n!} e^{-z \operatorname{Leb} \otimes U(B)}
$$

Note that $\boldsymbol{\Pi}^{z}$ is also the law of the random variable $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ obtained by sampling an unmarked configuration $\omega$ according to $\Pi^{z}$ and attaching marks to each point independently according to the distribution $U$ (see for instance [Kin92]).

For each $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ we shall consider the set of marked point configurations
which are located in $\Delta$, namely $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}:=\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}: \boldsymbol{\omega} \subset \Delta \times[q]\}$. The sigma algebra of events that happen in $\Delta$ only is $\mathcal{F}_{\Delta}:=\left.\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}^{-1} \mathcal{F}\right|_{\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}}$, where $\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}}:=$ $\left\{A \cap \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}: A \in \mathcal{F}\right\}$ is the trace sigma algebra and $\mathbf{p r}_{\Delta}: \boldsymbol{\omega} \rightarrow \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta}:=\boldsymbol{\omega} \cap(\Delta \times[q])$ denotes the projection onto $\Omega_{\Delta} . \Omega_{\Delta}$ and $\Omega_{\Delta}$ are $G_{\delta}$-sets and are therefore Polish. Their associated Borel $\sigma$-algebras are $\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}}$ and $\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}}$ respectively. The reference measure on $\left(\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta},\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}}\right)$ is the pushforward measure $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}:=\boldsymbol{\Pi}^{z} \circ \mathbf{p r}_{\Delta}^{-1}$. These objects are defined in a similar way for unmarked configurations: $\Omega_{\Delta}:=$ $\{\omega \in \Omega: \omega \subset \Delta\}, \operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}: \omega \rightarrow \omega_{\Delta}:=\omega \cap \Delta$, and $\mathcal{F}_{\Delta}:=\left.\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}^{-1} \mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}}$. The reference measure on $\Omega_{\Delta}$ is $\Pi_{\Delta}^{z}:=\Pi^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}^{-1}$. The set of marked and unmarked configurations with finitely many points are denoted $\Omega_{f}$ and $\Omega_{f}$ respectively.

From now on we shall focus mostly on marked configurations, but the concepts we introduce have natural analogues when the particles do not carry marks.

### 2.1.2 Hypergraphs and hyperedge interactions

The interaction between points considered here will depend on the geometry of their location, which is described in terms of a hypergraph. The interaction potential, which describes the strength of the interaction between points, will be defined on the hyperedges of the hypergraph. We now restrict our exposition to the case where we have marked point configurations, but all of the concepts described here can be defined analogously for unmarked point configurations.

Definition 2.1.1. A hypergraph structure is a measurable subset $\mathcal{H}$ of $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f} \times \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ such that $\boldsymbol{\tau} \subset \boldsymbol{\omega}$ for all $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathcal{H}$. A hypergraph structure $\mathcal{H}$ gives us a way of assigning a hypergraph to each configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega}$. The pair $(\boldsymbol{\omega}, \mathcal{H}(\boldsymbol{\omega}))$ is called a hypergraph where $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ is the set of vertices and $\boldsymbol{\mathcal { H }}(\boldsymbol{\omega}):=\left\{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f}\right.$ : $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathcal{H}\}$ is the set of hyperedges.

A hyperedge potential is a measurable function $\varphi$ from a hypergraph structure $\mathcal{H}$ to $\mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$.

We only consider hyperedge potentials which are shift-invariant and exhibit the finite-horizon property, defined below. Shift-invariance requires that $\mathcal{H}$ and $\varphi$ are not affected by translations and the finite-horizon property requires that the value $\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})$ can be determined by looking at $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ in a bounded
neighbourhood of the hyperedge $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ (although the size of this neighbourhood depends on $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ and $\boldsymbol{\omega}$.)

Definition 2.1.2. Let $\varphi: \mathcal{H} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ be a hyperedge potential and $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{x}: \boldsymbol{\Omega} \rightarrow \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ denote the function which translates the location of points by the vector $-x$. Then the pair $(\mathcal{H}, \varphi)$ is called shift-invariant if

$$
\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{x} \boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{x} \boldsymbol{\omega}\right) \in \mathcal{H} \text { and } \varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{x} \boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{x} \boldsymbol{\omega}\right)=\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})
$$

for all $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathcal{H}$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$.
A hyperedge potential $\varphi$ is said to satisfy the finite-horizon property if for each hyperedge $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathcal{H}$ there exists a set $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ called a horizon such that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \in \mathcal{H} \text { and } \varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \text { when } \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}=\boldsymbol{\omega} \text { on } \Delta \tag{2.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.1.3 Gibbs measures

Before defining the concept of a Gibbs measure in the context of a hyperedge potential on a hypergraph structure, we need to introduce the Hamiltonian for a fixed region $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ with boundary condition $\boldsymbol{\omega}$. The Hamiltonian is defined as a sum over the hyperedges for which either $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ itself or $\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})$ depends on $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta}$. We extend the domain of $\varphi$ to $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f} \times \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ by adopting the convention that $\varphi \equiv 0$ on $\left(\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f} \times \boldsymbol{\Omega}\right) \backslash \mathcal{H}$ and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{H}_{\Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega}):=\left\{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathcal{H}(\boldsymbol{\omega}): \varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right) \neq \varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \text { for some } \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}\right\} \tag{2.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Hamiltonian in $\Delta$ with boundary condition $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ is given by the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right):=\sum_{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathcal{H}_{\Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right) \tag{2.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}$, provided it is well-defined, and

$$
Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\omega}):=\int e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

is the partition function. In order to define the finite volume Gibbs distribution in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ we require that the Hamiltonian is well defined and the partition function is finite and non-zero. A configuration is admissible for $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}, z>0$ and $\varphi$ if $Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \in(0, \infty)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right):=\sum_{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathcal{H}_{\Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \varphi^{-}\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)<\infty \tag{2.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}$-almost all $\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}$, where $\varphi^{-}:=(-\varphi) \vee 0$ is the negative part of $\varphi$. The set of such configurations is denoted $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z}^{\varphi}$. If $z^{\prime} \geq z$ then $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z^{\prime}}^{\varphi} \subset \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z}^{\varphi}$ since $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z^{\prime}}$ and $\Pi_{\Delta}^{z}$ are mutually absolutely continuous with

$$
\frac{\mathrm{d} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)}{\mathrm{d} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \propto\left(z^{\prime} z^{-1}\right)^{\left|\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right|} \in(1, \infty)
$$

The finite-volume Gibbs distribution (alternatively the finite-volume geometric continuum Potts distribution) in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ for $\varphi, z$ and admissible boundary condition $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z}^{\varphi}$ is the probability measure on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \boldsymbol{\mathcal { F }})$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}^{z}(A):=\frac{1}{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\omega})} \int_{\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}} \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \tag{2.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $A \in \mathcal{F}$. Gibbs measures are defined by prescribing the conditional distributions when the configuration outside a region $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ is known:

Definition 2.1.3. A probability measure $P$ on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \mathcal{F})$ is called a Gibbs measure (alternatively a geometric continuum Potts measure) for $\mathcal{H}, \varphi$ and $z$ if for every $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$,

- $P\left(\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z}^{\varphi}\right)=1$, and
- For every measurable function $f: \Omega \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(f)=\int \frac{1}{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\omega})} \int_{\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}} f\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) P(\mathrm{~d} \boldsymbol{\omega}) . \tag{2.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The equations (2.1.8) are known as the $D L R$ equations, after Dobrushin, Lanford and Ruelle. They express that $\gamma_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(\cdot)$ is a version of the conditional probability $P\left(\cdot \mid \mathcal{F}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)(\boldsymbol{\omega})$. We are particularly interested in Gibbs measures which
are invariant under the translation group $\Theta:=\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{x}\right)_{x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}}$, the set of which is denoted $\mathscr{G}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}(\varphi, z)$. The main problem we investigate here is the existence of phase transitions - the existence of multiple distinct translation-invariant Gibbs measures. We first must address the problem of proving that $\mathscr{G}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}(\varphi, z)$ is non-empty.

Remark 2.1.4. The quantities we have introduced thus far are not in fact measurable with respect to the $\sigma$-algebras we have defined, but are measurable with respect to their universal completions. We therefore identify all sigma algebras considered here with their universal completions and all probability measures with their complete extensions. For more details regarding this see [DDG12, Remark 2.1 and Appendix]. The proofs can be easily adapted to the case of marked particles.

### 2.1.4 Pseudo-periodic configurations

Here we introduce the pseudo-periodic configurations. They will play a crucial role in our forthcoming arguments.

Definition 2.1.5. Let $M \in \mathbb{R}^{d \times d}$ be an invertible $d \times d$ matrix and define for $k \in \mathbb{Z}^{d}$ the cells

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(k):=\left\{M x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}: x-k \in[-1 / 2,1 / 2)^{2}\right\}, \tag{2.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which form a partition of $\mathbb{R}^{d}$ into parallelotopes. We write $C=C(0)$ and let $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ be a measurable subset of $\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{C} \backslash\{\emptyset\}$. The configurations that belong to the set

$$
\begin{equation*}
\overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}:=\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}: \theta_{M k}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{C(k)}\right) \in \boldsymbol{\Gamma} \text { for all } k \in \mathbb{Z}^{d}\right\} . \tag{2.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

are called pseudo-periodic.

### 2.1.5 Existence

Here we present a sufficient criteria under which a translation-invariant Gibbs measure can be shown to exist. We begin by defining a set of configurations


Figure 2.1: An example of a pseudo periodic configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}$ where $d=2, \boldsymbol{\Gamma}=\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{B}:=\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{C}: \omega=\{x\}\right.$ for some $\left.x \in B\right\}$ and $B$ is a ball centred at $(0,0)$.
for which the Hamiltonian is localised in the sense that dependence of $H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}$ on $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ is restricted to the points of $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ which lie in a bounded region.

Definition 2.1.6. Let $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$. A configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \Omega$ is said to confine the range of $\varphi$ from $\Delta$ if there exists a set $\partial \Delta(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ such that $\varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)=$ $\varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}\right)$ whenever $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}$ on $\partial \Delta(\boldsymbol{\omega}), \boldsymbol{\zeta} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathcal{H}_{\Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$. If this is true we write $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}$. We use the abbreviation $\partial_{\Delta} \boldsymbol{\omega}=\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\partial \Delta(\boldsymbol{\omega})}$. For $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}$, from now on we will choose to take $\partial \Delta(\boldsymbol{\omega})=\Delta \oplus r \backslash \Delta$, where $\Delta \oplus r:=\left\{x+y \in \mathbb{R}^{d}: x \in \Delta, y \in \mathbb{R}^{d}\right.$ and $\left.|y| \leq r\right\}$ and $r=r_{\Delta, \omega}$ is chosen to be as small as possible.

Clearly if $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\text {cr }}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \mathcal{H}_{\Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \partial_{\Delta} \omega\right)} \varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \partial_{\Delta} \boldsymbol{\omega}\right), \tag{2.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a finite sum.
Our first condition is the range condition. It ensures that the Hamiltonian is localised in the above sense almost surely. More concretely, if the range condition is satisfied and $P$ is a translation-invariant probability measure on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \boldsymbol{\mathcal { F }})$ with finite intensity such that $P(\emptyset)=0$, then $P\left(\boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}\right)=1$ (see [DDG12, Proposition 3.1] for the unmarked case. The same proof is applicable
here.) Therefore if $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}$ then the first part of the definition of admissibility (equation (2.1.6)) is true.
(R) The range condition. There exist constants $l_{R}, n_{R} \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\delta_{R}<\infty$ such that for all $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \mathcal{H}$ one can find a horizon (as in (2.1.3)) $\Delta$ for $\varphi$ satisfying the following: For every $x, y \in \Delta$ there exist $l$ open balls $B_{1}, \ldots, B_{l}$ (with $l \leq l_{R}$ ) such that

- $\cup_{i=1}^{k} \bar{B}_{i}$ is connected and contains $x$ and $y$, and
- for each $i$, either diam $B_{i} \leq \delta_{R}$ or $N_{B_{i}}(\omega) \leq n_{R}$.

The second condition is stability, which ensures that the partition function is finite.
(S) Stability. There exists a constant $c_{S} \geq 0$ such that

$$
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \geq-c_{S}\left|\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \partial_{\Delta} \boldsymbol{\omega}\right|
$$

for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}, \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}$.
The third condition is upper regularity, which is split into three parts: uniform confinement, uniform summability and strong non-rigidity. Uniform confinement states that the configurations in $\bar{\Gamma}$ confine the range of $\varphi$ in a uniform way, uniform summability ensures that the local Hamiltonians $H_{\Delta,(\cdot)}$ when restricted to $\overline{\bar{\Gamma}}$, admit an upper bound which scales appropriately with $|\Delta|$, and strong non-rigidity ensures that the pseudo-periodic configurations appear with enough weight to counterbalance the interactions.
(U) Upper Regularity. $M$ and $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ can be chosen so that the following conditions hold.
(U1) Uniform confinement: $\Gamma \subset \Omega_{\Delta}^{\text {cr }}$ for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$, and

$$
r_{\Gamma}:=\sup _{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{d}} \sup _{\omega \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}} r_{\Delta, \omega}<\infty .
$$

(U2) Uniform summability:

$$
c_{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{+}:=\sup _{\omega \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}} \sum_{\substack{\tau \in \mathcal{H}(\boldsymbol{\omega}): \\ \tau \cap C \neq \emptyset}} \frac{\varphi^{+}(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})}{|\tilde{\boldsymbol{\tau}}|}<\infty,
$$

where $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\tau}}:=\left\{k \in \mathbb{Z}^{d}: \tau \cap C(k) \neq \emptyset\right\}$ and $\varphi^{+}:=\max (\varphi, 0)$.
(U3) Strong non-rigidity:

$$
e^{z|C|} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{C}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma})>e^{c_{\Gamma}},
$$

where $c_{B}$ is defined as in $\left(\boldsymbol{U} \mathbf{2}^{\boldsymbol{B}}\right)$ except with $\varphi$ replacing $\varphi^{+}$.
Now we come to the existence theorem, which is an extension of [DDG12, Theorem 3.2] to allow for marked particles. For the extended proof see [Nol13, Theorem 2.1], but it is essentially the same as the original.

Theorem 2.1.7. (Existence). Let $\varphi: \mathcal{H} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ be a hyperedge potential and $z>0$. If the hypotheses $(\boldsymbol{R}),(\boldsymbol{S})$ and $(\boldsymbol{U})$ are satisfied then there exists a translation-invariant Gibbs measure $P \in \mathscr{G}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}(\varphi, z)$.

Remark 2.1.8. During the course of the proof it is shown that if (R), (S) are satisfied and (U) holds for $M$ and $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ then

$$
\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Gamma}: \sup _{k \in \mathbb{R}^{d}}\left|\boldsymbol{\omega}_{C(k)}\right|<\infty\right\} \subset \Omega_{\Lambda_{n}, z}^{\varphi}
$$

for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $z>0$, where $\Lambda_{n}:=\bigcup_{k \in\{-n, ., n\}^{d}} C(k)$.

### 2.2 Delaunay continuum Potts measures

We are interested in two-dimensional $(d=2)$ Gibbsian point processes whose interactions depend on the local geometry of the Delaunay triangulation. More explicitly, we want to investigate the structure of the set of geometric continuum Potts measures when the hypergraph under consideration is based on the Delaunay triangulation.

If $\tau=\{x, y, z\} \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ is non-collinear, then $B(\tau)$ denotes the unique open ball whose boundary has $\tau$ as a subset. Its boundary $\partial B(\tau)$ is called the circumcircle of $\tau$ and its radius is called the circumradius of $\tau$ and is denoted $\delta(\tau)$. The following hypergraph structures (where $i \in\{1,2\}$ and $\Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ ) are
of interest to us:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Del}_{3} & :=\left\{(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f} \times \boldsymbol{\Omega} \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{c}
\boldsymbol{\tau} \subset \boldsymbol{\omega},|\tau|=3, \tau \text { non-collinear, } \\
\partial B(\tau) \cap \omega=\tau, \text { and } B(\tau) \cap \omega=\emptyset .
\end{array}\right.\right\}, \\
\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta} & :=\left\{(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \operatorname{Del}_{3} \mid \overline{B(\tau)} \cap \Delta \neq \emptyset\right\}, \\
\operatorname{Del}_{i} & :=\left\{(\boldsymbol{\eta}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f} \times \boldsymbol{\Omega}| | \eta \mid=i \text { and } \exists \boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \text { such that } \boldsymbol{\eta} \subset \boldsymbol{\tau}\right\}, \\
\operatorname{Del}_{i, \Delta} & :=\left\{(\boldsymbol{\eta}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in \operatorname{Del}_{i} \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{c}
\exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \text { such that } \\
\eta \subset \tau \text { and } \partial B(\tau, \omega) \cap \Delta \neq \emptyset .
\end{array}\right.\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We denote the unmarked analogues $\operatorname{Del}, \operatorname{Del}_{3}, \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}, \operatorname{Del}_{i}$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{i, \Delta}$. We will often refer to the elements of $\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ as edges and those of $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ as triangles or tiles. Edges and triangles will typically be denoted by $\boldsymbol{\eta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ respectively.

From now on we assume that the point locations $\omega$ are in general quadratic position, which is to say that
(a) no 3 points lie on a single line,
(b) no 4 points lie on the boundary of a circle.

It is clearly implied by (b) that if $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}(\omega)$ then $|\tau| \leq 3$. If in addition to (a) and (b) every half plane contains at least one point, then the elements of $\omega, \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ form a triangulation of the whole plane, called the Delaunay triangulation. By this we mean that the set containing the elements of $\omega$ and the convex hulls of the elements of $\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ is a simplicial complex covering the whole plane. These conditions are satisfied almost surely with respect to the reference measure $\Pi^{z}$ [M194, Proposition 4.1.2]. Furthermore, the sets $\operatorname{Del}_{i, \Delta}(\omega)$ for $i=1,2,3$ are almost surely finite (Proposition A.0.1).

The set $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ contains the triangles in the Delaunay triangulation whose circumcircle intersects $\Delta$. These are the triangles which can be removed from the triangulation by changing the configuration inside $\Delta$, that is to say

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \Longleftrightarrow \boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \text { and } \exists \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta} \text { s.t } \boldsymbol{\tau} \notin \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \tag{2.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 2.2: A Delaunay triangulation. The grey circles represent the open balls $B(\tau, \omega)$.

To see this, notice that if $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ and $\boldsymbol{x} \in(\Delta \cap B(\tau)) \times[q]$ then $\boldsymbol{\tau} \notin \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega} \cup \boldsymbol{x})$. On the other hand, if $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ belongs to the right hand side then $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ and either $\tau \cap \omega_{\Delta} \neq \emptyset$ or $\exists \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}$ such that $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \omega^{\prime} \neq \emptyset$. In both cases $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \Delta \neq \emptyset$, and so $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$.

Definition 2.2.1. If $\mathcal{H} \in\left\{\mathbf{D e l}_{2}, \operatorname{Del}_{3}, \mathrm{Del}_{2} \cup \mathrm{Del}_{3}\right\}$ then the finite-volume geometric continuum Potts distribution in $\Delta$ (2.1.7) is known as the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution in $\Delta$ and geometric continuum Potts measures (Definition 2.1.3) are known as Delaunay continuum Potts measures.

If $\mathcal{H}=\operatorname{Del}_{3}$ and $\varphi$ is a hypergraph potential on $\operatorname{Del}_{3}$ of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})=\varphi^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\tau}) \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some measurable function $\varphi^{\prime}:\left\{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{f}:|\boldsymbol{\tau}|=3\right\} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ then by (2.2.1),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{H}_{\Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \backslash\left\{\boldsymbol{\tau}: \varphi^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\tau})=0\right\}=\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) \backslash\left\{\boldsymbol{\tau}: \varphi^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\tau})=0\right\}, \tag{2.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \varphi^{\prime}(\boldsymbol{\tau}), \tag{2.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H_{\Delta, \omega}$ is the Hamiltonian in $\Delta$ with boundary condition $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ defined in (2.1.5). $H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)$ is therefore a finite sum, so the first criterion of admissibility, (2.1.6), is always satisfied.

### 2.3 The random cluster representation

The purpose of this section is to obtain a joint construction of the finite-volume Gibbs distribution and a related continuum hyperedge percolation model called the geometric continuum random cluster model. The construction is analogous to the joint construction of the discrete Potts model and its Fortuin-Kastelyn representation. This representation will allow us to analyse the phase transition behaviour of geometric continuum Potts models, much in the same way as the Fortuin-Kastelyn random cluster model has proven to be of great value in analysing the phase transition behaviour of the Ising and Potts models. Random cluster representations for continuum particle systems were first discovered independently by Georgii and Häggström [GH96] and Chayes et al [CCK95]. Chayes et al considered a hard-core repulsion between particles of different type, whereas Georgii and Häggström considered finite range repulsive pair interactions more generally. These representations were generalised in [Eye14] to Gibbsian point processes with hypergraph interactions, although the author's definition of $\mathcal{H}_{\Delta}$ differs to the one used here and in [DDG12]. Phase transitions for Potts models on Delaunay graphs with a variety of interactions have been shown in [AE16] and [AE19] using this representation. We present a similar representation here although we only consider the hypergraph $\mathrm{Del}_{3}$.

### 2.3.1 Hyperedge percolation models

Hyperedge percolation models are created by taking random unmarked point configurations and declaring hyperedges of the associated hypergraph to be
either 'open' or 'closed' according to some hyperedge process. A notion of connectedness is obtained by declaring that two points are connected if one can travel between them via open hyperedges. We shall limit ourselves to unmarked hypergraphs for which each hyperedge contains the same number of points, that is $\exists k \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $|\tau|=k$ for all $(\tau, \omega) \in \mathcal{H}$. The geometric continuum random cluster model is an example of such a model.

One could view a configuration in this kind of model as a pair $\left(\omega, \sigma_{\mathcal{H}(\omega)}\right)$ where $\omega \in \Omega$ and $\sigma_{\mathcal{H}(\omega)} \in\{0,1\}^{\mathcal{H}(\omega)}$, with $\sigma_{\mathcal{H}(\omega)}(\tau)=1$ signifying that $\tau$ is open and $\sigma_{\mathcal{H}(\omega)}(\tau)=0$ signifying that $\tau$ is closed. However, we prefer to represent a configuration as a pair $G=(\omega, E)$ where $\omega \in \Omega$ and $E$ is a locally finite set of hyperedges. More precisely, $E \in \mathcal{E}$, where

$$
\mathcal{E}:=\left\{E \subset \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{d}, k}: \bigcup_{e \in E} e \text { is locally finite }\right\},
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{d}, k}:=\left\{e \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}:|e|=k\right\} . \tag{2.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The sample space is therefore $\mathcal{G}=\Omega \times \mathcal{E}$. In this formulation $E$ represents the set of hyperedges which are considered to be open. Note that $\mathcal{G}$ also contains elements which do not belong to $\mathcal{H}$ since not every $(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ satisfies $e \in E \Longrightarrow e \subset \omega$. We equip $\mathcal{E}$ with the sigma algebra $\Sigma$ generated by the counting variables $N_{\Delta}: E \mapsto\left|E_{\Delta}\right|$ for $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d k}$, similar to how we defined the sigma algebra $\mathcal{F}$ on $\Omega$. As before, $\Sigma$ is the Borel $\sigma$-algebra for the Polish topology on $\mathcal{E}$. Therefore the $\sigma$-algebra $\mathcal{A}:=\mathcal{F} \otimes \Sigma$ turns $\mathcal{G}$ into a standard Borel space.

Let $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$. Two points $x, y \in \omega$ are adjacent if there exists $\tau \in E$ such that $x, y \in \tau$. A path connecting $x$ and $y$ is a sequence of points $\left(x_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n} \subset \omega$ with $n \in \mathbb{N}, x_{1}=x$ and $x_{n}=y$ such that for all $i \in\{1, \ldots, n-1\}$ there exists $\tau_{i} \in E$ such that $x_{i}, x_{i+1} \in \tau_{i}$. We say that $x \in \omega$ and $y \in \omega$ belong to the same connected component of $G$ if there is a path connecting them.

### 2.3.2 Background and type interactions

We consider the scenario where there are two interactions, one of which only applies to hyperedges containing particles of different type. The strength of both interactions is irrespective of the particles' type.

Suppose there exist measurable functions $\psi, \phi: \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 3} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$, such that the hyperedge potential $\varphi$ on $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}$ can be written as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega})=\psi(\tau)+\phi(\tau)\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\omega}}(\tau)\right), \tag{2.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\delta_{\sigma_{\omega}}(\tau):= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } \sigma_{\omega}(x)=\sigma_{\omega}(y) \text { for all }\{x, y\} \subset \tau \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

We assume that $\phi$ is repulsive, which is to say that $\phi \geq 0 . \psi$ and $\phi$ are known as the background and type interactions repectively. Recall from that since (2.2.2) is satisfied,

$$
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \psi(\tau)+\phi(\tau)\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\tau}}(\tau)\right) .
$$

For notational convenience we make the definitions

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) & :=\sum_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \psi(\tau),  \tag{2.3.3}\\
H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\phi}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) & \left.:=\sum_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta} c\right.}\right)
\end{array}\right\rangle(\tau)\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\tau}}(\tau)\right) .
$$

The Hamiltonian can then be split into two terms:

$$
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)+H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\phi}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Notice that (2.3.3) is the Hamiltonian in $\Delta$ with boundary condition $\omega$ in the unmarked regime for the potential $\psi^{\prime}: \operatorname{Del}_{3} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ defined by $\psi^{\prime}(\tau, \omega):=$
$\psi(\tau)$. This is to say that if $\mathcal{H}=\mathrm{Del}_{3}$ then

$$
\sum_{\tau \in \mathcal{H}_{\Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)} \psi(\tau)=\sum_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\left.\Delta c^{c}\right)}\right.} \psi(\tau)
$$

In a slight abuse of terminology we will at times refer to $\psi$ itself as a hyperedge potential and write $\Omega_{\Delta, z}^{\psi}$ in place of $\Omega_{\Delta, z}^{\psi^{\prime}}$.

### 2.3.3 The Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution

The Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution is an example of a hyperedge percolation model as described in section 2.3.1. The Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ with boundary condition $\omega$ is constructed by sampling a collection of points according to the finite volume Gibbs distribution with interaction $\psi$ and opening each hyperedge independently with some probability which depends $\phi$. Each configuration is then weighted according to the number of connected components that are present.

Let $\omega \in \Omega$ be a configuration which is admissible with respect to $\Delta \Subset$ $\mathbb{R}^{d}$, hyperedge potential $\psi$ and activity $z>0$. The distribution of particle positions is given by the (unmarked) finite volume Gibbs distribution in $\Delta$ with potential $\psi$, that is the measure defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(A):=\frac{1}{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)} \int_{\Omega_{\Delta}} \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \tag{2.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $A \in \mathcal{F}$, where $Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)$ is the normalising constant.
For $\omega \in \Omega$, let $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}$ denote the distribution of the random hyperedge configuration $\left\{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega): \xi_{\tau}=1\right\} \in \mathcal{E}$, where $\left(\xi_{\tau}\right)_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)}$ are independent Bernoulli random variables such that $\xi_{\tau}=1$ with probability

$$
p_{\Delta}(\tau):= \begin{cases}1-e^{-\phi(\tau)} & \text { if } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)  \tag{2.3.5}\\ 1 & \text { if } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) .\end{cases}
$$

Notice that $0 \leq 1-e^{-\phi(\tau)} \leq 1$ because it was assumed that $\phi$ is repulsive. The measure $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}$ is called the hyperedge drawing mechanism. The fact that
the maps $\Omega \times \Sigma \ni(\omega, A) \mapsto \mu_{\omega, \Delta}(A)$ are stochastic kernels is established in [Eye14, Lemma 2.1.3].

Let $N_{c c}(\omega, E)$ denote the number of connected components in the hypergraph $(\omega, E)$. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega):=\iint q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega_{\Delta} \subset \cup \omega^{\prime}, E\right)} \mu_{\omega_{\Delta} \mathrm{C} \cup \omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} E) e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \in(0, \infty) \tag{2.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega) \in(0, \infty)$ also, since $q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega_{\Delta c} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)} \in(1, \infty)$. We can therefore make the following definition.

Definition 2.3.1. If $\mathbf{Z}_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega) \in(0, \infty)$ the Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ for $\psi, \phi, z$, and boundary condition $\omega$ is the probability measure on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ defined by

$$
C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(A):=\frac{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)}{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)} \iint \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right) q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} E) P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right),
$$

where $N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right)$ is the number of connected components in the hypergraph $\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right)$. Since $\mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}$ leaves the hyperedges outside of $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ open we say that $C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ has a wired boundary condition.

Notice that if $\omega_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}=\omega_{\Delta^{c}}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \leq N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right) \leq K\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)+\left|\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right| \tag{2.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}$-almost surely, where

$$
\begin{align*}
K\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) & :=\left|\left\{x \in \omega_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime} \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{l}
\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \text { for every } \\
\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \text { with } x \in \tau
\end{array}\right.\right\}\right| \\
& \leq\left|\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right)_{\Delta^{c}}\right| \\
& =\left|\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)\right| . \tag{2.3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

To begin the proof of the (2.3.8) last equality, suppose $x \in\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$. Let $\tau$ denote one of the triangles in $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ to which $x$ belongs. If $\tau \in$ $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$ then clearly $x \in \operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$. Otherwise $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$, which implies that there is a triangle $\tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$ containing $x$ for which $\overline{B\left(\tau^{\prime}\right)} \cap \omega_{\Delta}^{\prime} \neq \emptyset$. In this case $x \in \tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$, and so $x \in \operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$.

Conversely, if $x \in \operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$, then $\exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$ containing $x$. If $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ then clearly $x \in\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$. Otherwise, $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \omega_{\Delta} \neq \emptyset$, and so $\exists \tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ containing $x$. Thus $x \in\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$, which concludes the proof of (2.3.8).

Combining (2.3.7) and (2.3.8) we obtain

$$
Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega) \leq \mathbf{Z}_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega) \leq e^{(q-1) z|\Delta|} q^{-\left|\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)\right|} Z_{\Delta}^{z q}(\omega) .
$$

Therefore to obtain $\mathbf{Z}_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega) \in(0, \infty)$ it is sufficient to assume that $\omega$ is admissible with respect to $\psi, z q$ and $\Delta$.

### 2.3.4 The random cluster representation measure

To obtain the representation measure, particles are positioned according to the measure $P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ (defined in (2.3.4)), given marks independently with a uniform distribution and hyperedges connecting them are opened according to the hyperedge drawing mechanism. The resulting measure is then conditioned on the event that two points in the same connected component must have the same mark.

For a fixed set of particle positions $\omega$, let $\lambda_{\omega, \Delta}$ denote the distribution of the mark vector $\sigma_{\omega} \in[q]^{\omega}$ where $\left(\sigma_{\omega}(x)\right)_{x \in \omega_{\Delta}}$ are independent and uniformly distributed on $[q]$ and $\sigma_{\omega}(x)=1$ for all $x \in \omega_{\Delta^{c}} . \lambda_{\omega, \Delta}$ is called the type picking mechanism. We say that $\lambda_{\omega, \Delta}$ has a monochromatic boundary condition since all points outside of $\Delta$ have the same mark.

Let $B \in \mathcal{F} \times \Sigma$ denote the event that any two points can only belong to the same connected component if they have the same mark, that is

$$
B=\left\{(\boldsymbol{\omega}, E) \in \boldsymbol{\Omega} \times \mathcal{E}: \sum_{\tau \in E}\left(1-\delta_{\omega}(\tau)\right)=0\right\} .
$$

If $\omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z}^{\psi}$ we can define $m_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ on $(\Omega \times \mathcal{E}, \mathcal{F} \times \Sigma)$ as the measure satisfying

$$
m_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(A):=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\left(\omega^{\prime}, \sigma_{\omega^{\prime}}\right), E\right) \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} E) \lambda_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}\left(\mathrm{d} \sigma_{\omega^{\prime}}\right) P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) .
$$

There exists $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}: \omega_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}=k\right)>0$, so

$$
m_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(B) \geq P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}: \omega_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}=k\right) q^{-k}>0 .
$$

Definition 2.3.2. The Delaunay random cluster representation measure in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ for $\psi, z$, and boundary condition $\omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z}^{\psi}$ is the probability measure on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega} \times \mathcal{E}, \mathcal{F} \times \Sigma)$ defined by

$$
\mathrm{P}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(\cdot):=m_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(\cdot \mid B) .
$$

The random cluster representation measure is a joint construction of the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution and the Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution. The former can be obtained if one only looks at the particle positions and their types and disregards the hyperedges. Alternatively, the latter can be obtained by are ignoring the type of each particle. These statements are formalised in the next proposition. They are very similar to Propositions 2.14 and 2.15 from [Eye14] (which are in turn are very similar to Propositions 2.1 and 2.2 from [GH96]) but the author uses a different definition of the set $\mathcal{H}_{\Delta}$. The proofs in our context do not differ in any notable way so they are omitted.

Let $\rho_{1}$ and $\rho_{2}$ denote the projections from $\Omega \times \mathcal{E}$ to $\Omega$ and $\Omega \times \mathcal{E}$ respectively.

Proposition 2.3.3. (The random cluster representation). Let $\Delta \Subset$ $\mathbb{R}^{2}, z>0, \omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z q}^{\psi}$ and $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega, \sigma_{\omega}\right)$ where $\sigma_{\omega} \equiv 1$. Then $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta, z q}^{\varphi}$ and

1. $\mathrm{P}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z q} \circ \rho_{1}^{-1}=\gamma_{\Delta, \omega}^{z q}$,
2. $\mathrm{P}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z q} \circ \rho_{2}^{-1}=C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$.

### 2.3.5 Phase transitions, symmetry breaking and connectivity

The significance of the random cluster representation is that it allows us to relate the influence the boundary condition of the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution has on the mark of each particle to the percolative properties of the Delaunay random cluster distribution. Consider the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution in some region $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. Since $\phi$ is repulsive, it is clear
that there is an incentive for particles of the same hyperedge to have the same mark, and so particles whose mark is the same as the monochromatic boundary condition will be more prevalent in $\Delta$ than the others. This effect will be diminished as the size of the region $\Delta$ increases, but thanks to the random cluster representation we shall deduce later that this effect does not disappear entirely in the limit $\Delta \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}$, so long as the probability with respect to the Delaunay random cluster distribution that a fixed region $\Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ is connected to $\Delta^{c}$ is bounded away from 0 . There will remain one mark which is preferred over the others, a phenomenon which we call breaking the symmetry of the mark distribution. This leads us to the discovery of $q$ distinct phases (Delaunay continuum Potts measures), which each have a preferred mark.

For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, let $N_{\Lambda, i}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ denote the number of particles located in $\Lambda$ with mark $i \in[q]$ and $N_{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}}(\omega, E)$ denote the number of particles in $\Lambda$ which are connected to $\Delta^{c}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
N_{\Lambda, i}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) & :=\left|\left\{x \in \omega_{\Lambda}: \sigma_{\omega}(x)=i\right\}\right|, \\
N_{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}}(\omega, E) & :=\mid\left\{x \in \omega_{\Lambda}: \exists \text { a path in }(\omega, E) \text { from } x \text { to some } y \in \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right\} \mid .
\end{aligned}
$$

The following result can be shown using the random cluster representation (Proposition 2.3.3). For details see [Eye14, Proposition 2.17] as it is proven in the same way.

Proposition 2.3.4. If $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, \omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z q}^{\psi}$ and $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega, \sigma_{\omega}\right)$ where $\sigma_{\omega} \equiv 1$. Then

$$
\int\left(q N_{\Lambda, 1}-N_{\Lambda}\right) \mathrm{d} \gamma_{\Delta, \omega}^{z q}=(q-1) \int N_{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c} \mathrm{~d}} C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}
$$

Using this result one can prove that if there is a lower bound $\int N_{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}} \mathrm{~d} C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z} \geq$ $c>0$ which is uniform over all $\Delta$ then there is a phase transition:

Theorem 2.3.5. (Phase Transition). Let $\Lambda_{n}:=\bigcup_{k \in\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}} C(k)$. Suppose $(\boldsymbol{R}),(\boldsymbol{S}) \mathfrak{\xi}(\boldsymbol{U})$ are satisfied by $\varphi, M, \boldsymbol{\Gamma} \xi z$. If there exists $\omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z q}^{\psi}$ such that $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega, \sigma_{\omega}\right) \in \boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ for all $\sigma_{\omega}: \omega \rightarrow[q]$ and there exists $c>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int N_{C(k) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{s}} \mathrm{~d} C_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z} \geq c \tag{2.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $k \in\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$, then there exists at least $q$ translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measures with interaction $\varphi$ and activity $z q$.

The full proof of this statement mimics the proof of [Eye14, Section 2.7]. We just give a brief overview here. The proof begins by showing that constructing a sequence of probability measures $\left(P_{n}^{1}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \mathcal{F})$ such that

1. $P_{n}^{1}$ are invariant under the skewed lattice translations $\left(\theta_{x}\right)_{x \in M \mathbb{Z}^{2}}$,
2. For $i \in[q]$ and $\Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}$,

$$
\int\left(q N_{\Delta, i}-N_{\Delta}\right) \mathrm{d} P_{n}^{1}=\int\left(q N_{\Delta, i}-N_{\Delta}\right) \mathrm{d} \gamma_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z q},
$$

where $\sigma_{\omega} \equiv 1$,
3. $P_{n}^{1}$ has a subsequence which converges locally ${ }^{1}$ to some measure $P^{1}$, and after spatially averaging the measure $P^{1}\left(\cdot \mid\{\emptyset\}^{c}\right)$, one obtains a translationinvariant Gibbs measure $\tilde{P}^{1}$.

The local convergence in conjunction with the uniform lower bound and Proposition 2.3.4 then implies that for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$,

$$
\int\left(q N_{\Delta, 1}-N_{\Delta}\right) \mathrm{d} \tilde{P}^{1} \geq(q-1) c>0
$$

and since $\gamma_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z q}$ is invariant under permutations of $\{2, \ldots, q\}$, we have

$$
\int N_{\Delta, 1} \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}^{1}>\int N_{\Delta, 2} \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}^{1}=\ldots=\int N_{\Delta, q} \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}^{1}
$$

and the symmetry of the mark distribution is broken. Finally, in the same way, for each $i \in[q] \backslash\{1\}$ it is possible to obtain a measure $\tilde{P}^{i}$ in which the mark $i$ is preferred. This concludes the proof.

### 2.3.6 Hyperedge percolation to site percolation

We now focus on how to show that condition (2.3.9) is satisfied. We will construct a continuum site percolation model $\hat{C}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}$ in which the event that

[^0]$\Lambda$ is connected to $\Delta^{c}$ is smaller that it is with respect to $C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$. We can then use a coarse graining argument to bound this event from below. The new percolation model will share the same particle distribution as $C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$.

We will define $\hat{C}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}$ as a measure on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \mathcal{F})$ where $q=2$, although instead of the mark space $\{1,2\}$ we will use the mark space $\{0,1\}$. Points with mark 1 are considered to be 'open' and points with mark 0 are 'closed.' A path in $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}$ connecting $\boldsymbol{x}$ and $\boldsymbol{y}$ is a sequence of points $\left(\boldsymbol{x}_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n} \subset \boldsymbol{\omega}$ with $n \in \mathbb{N}, \boldsymbol{x}_{1}=\boldsymbol{x}$ and $\boldsymbol{x}_{n}=\boldsymbol{y}$ such that $\sigma_{\omega}\left(x_{i}\right)=1$ for all $i \in[n]$ and there exists $\tau_{j} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$ such that $\boldsymbol{x}_{j}, \boldsymbol{x}_{j+1} \in \boldsymbol{\tau}_{j}$ for all $j \in[n-1]$. The event that $\Lambda$ is connected to $\Delta^{c}$ is the following:

$$
\left\{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}\right\}:=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega} & \begin{array}{c}
\text { There exists a path }\left(\boldsymbol{x}_{i}\right)_{i=1}^{n} \\
\text { in } \boldsymbol{\omega} \text { with } x_{1} \in \omega_{\Lambda} \text { and } x_{n} \in \omega_{\Delta^{c}}
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Let $M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ denote the marginal distribution $C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(\cdot, \mathcal{E})$. We can then write

$$
C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(d \omega^{\prime}, \mathrm{d} E\right)=\mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}^{q}(\mathrm{~d} E) M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}^{q}(\mathrm{~d} E):=\frac{q^{K\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} E)}{\int q^{K\left(\omega^{\prime}, E\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} E)} . \tag{2.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\hat{\mathcal{H}}$ denote an unmarked hypergraph structure which is a subset of $\mathrm{Del}_{3}$, and $\hat{p} \in[0,1]$.

For $\omega \in \Omega$, let $\hat{\mu}_{\omega}$ denote the distribution of the random hyperedge configuration $\left\{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega): \xi_{\tau}=1\right\} \in \mathcal{E}$, where $\left(\xi_{\tau}\right)_{\tau \in \mathcal{H}(\omega)}$ are independent Bernoulli random variables such that $\xi_{\tau}=1$ with probability $p \mathbb{1}_{\hat{\mathcal{H}}(\omega)}(\tau)$. In other words, each hyperedge $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ is declared open independently with probability $\hat{p} \mathbb{1}_{\hat{\mathcal{H}}(\omega)}(\tau)$, and closed otherwise.

In addition, define $\hat{\omega}:=\{x \in \omega: \exists \tau \in \hat{\mathcal{H}}(\omega)$ with $x \in \tau\}$ and let $\hat{\lambda}_{\omega}$ denote the distribution of the mark vector $\sigma_{\omega} \in\{0,1\}^{\omega}$ where $\left(\sigma_{\omega}(x)\right)_{x \in \omega}$ are independent and identically distributed such that $\sigma_{\omega}(x)=1$ with probability $p \mathbb{1}_{\hat{\omega}}(x)$.

We can now define our site percolation measure on $(\boldsymbol{\Omega}, \boldsymbol{\mathcal { F }})$ to be

$$
\hat{C}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(\mathrm{d} \omega^{\prime}, \mathrm{d} \sigma_{\omega}\right)=\hat{\lambda}_{\omega}\left(\mathrm{d} \sigma_{\omega^{\prime}}\right) M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) .
$$

The result regarding connectivity is the following. For the full proof see [Eye14, Proposition 2.18].

Proposition 2.3.6. If $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}^{q} \succcurlyeq \hat{\mu}_{\omega}$ then for all $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$,

$$
\int N_{\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}} \mathrm{~d} C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z} \geq \hat{C}_{\Delta, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(\Lambda \leftrightarrow \Delta^{c}\right)
$$

From this proposition one can see that for (2.3.9) to be satisfied it is sufficient to obtain a uniform lower bound on $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(C(k) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right)$. This will be accomplished in the next chapter using a coarse graining procedure which enable a stochastic comparison to be made with Bernoulli percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$.

Let $\hat{\mu}_{\omega, \Delta}$ denote the measure for which each hyperedge $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ is opened independently with probability

$$
\hat{p}(\tau) \mathbb{1}_{\hat{\mathcal{H}}(\omega) \cap \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)}(\tau)+\mathbb{1}_{\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)}(\tau),
$$

where $\hat{p}: \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 3} \rightarrow[0,1]$. With respect to both $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}^{q}$ and $\hat{\mu}_{\omega, \Delta}$, the status of all but finitely many hyperedges is not fixed. In this case, one can show that $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}^{q} \succcurlyeq \hat{\mu}_{\omega, \Delta}$ if for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$, the comparison inequalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{p_{\Delta}(\tau)}{q^{2}\left(1-p_{\Delta}(\tau)\right)} \geq \frac{\hat{p}(\tau)}{(1-\hat{p}(\tau))} \tag{2.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

are satisfied (with the convention that $\frac{p}{1-p}=\infty$ when $p=1$ ) by applying the same method as in the case where the hypergraph is finite. For the proof in the case of a finite hypergraph, see [Eye14, Proposition 2.3] (which generalises a result originally proven in [For72]). Employing a coupling argument similar to that used in Lemma 2.4.1 we see that $\hat{\mu}_{\omega, \Delta} \succcurlyeq \hat{\mu}_{\omega}$. Therefore, to show that $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}^{q} \succcurlyeq \hat{\mu}_{\omega}$ we need only verify (2.3.11).

### 2.4 Mixed site-bond percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$

Here we take a small detour to prove a technical result about mixed site-bond percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$ which will prove useful when carrying out the aforementioned coarse-graining procedure. This result is not strictly necessary, and in fact [Rus82, Lemma 1] would suffice for our purposes since we only need to consider site percolation in chapter 3 . We choose to include this result here because there are situations (for instance the model considered in [AE19]) when one needs to use mixed site-bond percolation to accomplish the coarsegraining argument. The result states that if all conditional probabilities are uniformly bounded from below then the percolation probability is greater than the percolation probability of Bernoulli site-bond percolation. For more results regarding comparisons of site percolation measures with product measures see [LSS97].

Let $\mathcal{B}=\left\{\{x, y\} \subset \mathbb{Z}^{2}:|x-y|=1\right\}$ denote the set of edges (or bonds) between neighbouring vertices in $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$, and $\Omega:=\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2} \cup \mathcal{B}}$. For $\omega \in \Omega$ we say that a site or bond $x \in \mathbb{Z}^{2} \cup \mathcal{B}$ is open if $\omega(x)=1$ and closed otherwise. We will use the shorthand $\omega_{x}$ and $\omega_{\{x, y\}}$ in place of $\omega(x)$ and $\omega(\{x, y\})$ respectively. Let

$$
C(\omega):=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
x \in \mathbb{Z}^{2} & \begin{array}{c}
\text { There exists a path } 0=x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}=x \text { s.t } \omega_{x_{i}}=1 \\
\text { for } i \in[n] \text { and } \omega_{\left\{x_{i}, x_{i+1}\right\}}=1 \text { for } i \in[n-1] .
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

This is the open cluster around the origin. Similarly, if $\omega \in \Omega$ or $\omega \in \tilde{\Omega}:=$ $\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2}}$ we define the open site cluster as follows:

$$
C_{s}(\omega):=\left\{\begin{array}{l|c}
x \in \mathbb{Z}^{2} & \begin{array}{c}
\text { There exists a path } 0=x_{0}, \ldots, x_{n}=x \\
\text { such that } \omega_{x_{i}}=1 \text { for } i \in[n]
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

The event that 0 is connected to the set $A$ is

$$
\{0 \leftrightarrow A\}=\{\omega \in \Omega \mid \text { There exists } x \in A \cap C(\omega)\},
$$

and the event that percolation occurs is

$$
\{0 \leftrightarrow \infty\}:=\{\omega \in \Omega| | C(\omega) \mid=\infty\}=\bigcap_{n \in \mathbb{N}}\left\{0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right\},
$$

where $\Lambda_{n}=[-n, n]^{2} \cap \mathbb{Z}^{2}$.
Let $\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}$ denote the measure for which each site is opened independently with probability $p$ and each bond is opened independently with probability $p^{\prime}$.

Lemma 2.4.1. If $\mathbb{P}$ is a measure on $\Omega$ satisfying the conditions:

1. For all $x \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ and $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left(\omega_{x}=1 \mid \omega_{y}=\omega_{y}^{\prime} \text { for } y \neq x\right) \geq p, \tag{2.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. For all $\{x, y\} \in \mathcal{B}$ and $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega$ satisfying $\omega_{x}^{\prime}=\omega_{y}^{\prime}=1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left(\omega_{\{x, y\}}=1 \mid \omega_{\{w, z\}}=\omega_{\{w, z\}}^{\prime} \text { for }\{w, z\} \neq\{x, y\}\right) \geq p^{\prime} \tag{2.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\mathbb{P}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty) \geq \mu_{p, p^{\prime}}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty)$.
Proof. Let $\tilde{\mathbb{P}}$ and $\tilde{\mu}_{p, p^{\prime}}$ denote the marginal measures of $\mathbb{P}$ and $\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}$ on $\tilde{\Omega}$. Inequality (2.4.1) will allow us to couple these measures together. We start by identifying $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$ with the natural numbers via an arbitrary ordering. Let $E_{k}^{+}\left(E_{k}^{-}\right)$be the event that the site $k$ is open (closed) and let $\omega^{(k)}=\left\{\omega^{\prime} \in\right.$ $\tilde{\Omega} \mid \omega_{i}^{\prime}=\omega_{i}$ for all $\left.i<k\right\}$. We define the measure $m$ on $\tilde{\Omega} \times \tilde{\Omega}$ inductively by setting (as was done in [?])

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
m\left(E_{1}^{+} \times E_{1}^{+}\right)=p, & m\left(E_{1}^{+} \times E_{1}^{-}\right)=\mathbb{P}\left(E_{1}^{+}\right)-p, \\
m\left(E_{1}^{-} \times E_{1}^{+}\right)=0, & m\left(E_{1}^{-} \times E_{1}^{-}\right)=1-\mathbb{P}\left(E_{1}^{+}\right),
\end{array}
$$

and then for $k \geq 2$,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
m\left(E_{k}^{+} \times E_{k}^{+}\right)=p, & m\left(E_{k}^{+} \times E_{k}^{-}\right)=\mathbb{P}\left(E_{k}^{+} \mid \omega^{(k)}\right)-p, \\
m\left(E_{k}^{-} \times E_{k}^{+}\right)=0, & m\left(E_{k}^{-} \times E_{k}^{-}\right)=1-\mathbb{P}\left(E_{k}^{+} \mid \omega^{(k)}\right) .
\end{array}
$$

This measure satisfies the following:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right) & =\int \mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) \tilde{\mathbb{P}}(\mathrm{d} \omega) \\
& =\int \mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) m\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega, \mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and similarly

$$
\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right)=\int \mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right) m\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega, \mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Therefore if

$$
\int \mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right)-\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right) m\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega, \mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \geq 0
$$

then we have

$$
\mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right) \geq \mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right),
$$

and so to complete the proof we need only to show the former inequality. First we note that if $\omega \geq \omega^{\prime}$, then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) \geq \mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right), \tag{2.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

since the event $0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}$ only depends on the bonds between sites in $C_{s}$. Secondly, since all sites in $C_{s}$ are open, we can conclude using property (2.4.2) that for all $\omega \in \tilde{\Omega}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) \geq \mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) . \tag{2.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be shown by another coupling on $\{0,1\}^{B(\omega)}$, where $B(\omega)$ is the set of bonds between sites in $C_{s}(\omega)$. Since $\omega \geq \omega^{\prime}$ almost surely with respect to $m$ we can now conclude using (2.4.3) and (2.4.4) that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int \mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right)-\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)\right) m\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega, \mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \\
\geq & \int \mathbb{P}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right)-\mu_{p, p^{\prime}}\left(0 \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c} \mid C_{s}=C_{s}(\omega)\right) m\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega, \mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \\
\geq & 0
\end{aligned}
$$

Corollary 2.4.2. Let $p_{c}$ denote the critical probability for site percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$. If $\mathbb{P}$ is a measure on $\Omega$ such that

1. For all $x \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ and $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega$,

$$
\mathbb{P}\left(\omega_{x}=1 \mid \omega_{y}=\omega_{y}^{\prime} \text { for } y \neq x\right)>\sqrt{p_{c}},
$$

2. For all $\{x, y\} \in \mathcal{B}$ and all $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega$ satisfying $\omega_{x}^{\prime}=\omega_{y}^{\prime}=1$,

$$
\mathbb{P}\left(\omega_{\{x, y\}}=1 \mid \omega_{\{w, z\}}=\omega_{\{w, z\}}^{\prime} \text { for }\{w, z\} \neq\{x, y\}\right)>\sqrt{p_{c}} .
$$

Then $\mathbb{P}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty)>0$.
Proof. By Lemma (2.4.1) there exists $\epsilon>0$ such that

$$
\mathbb{P}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty) \geq \mu_{\sqrt{p_{c}}+\epsilon, \sqrt{p_{c}}+\epsilon}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty) .
$$

By applying inequality (4) of [Ham80] we can see that the right hand side is greater than $\mu_{\left(\sqrt{p_{c}}+\epsilon\right)^{2}, 1}(0 \leftrightarrow \infty)$, which is greater than 0 since $\left(\sqrt{p_{c}}+\epsilon\right)^{2}>$ $p_{c}$.

### 2.5 Previous results for Delaunay interactions

To close this chapter we will review previous results for Delaunay continuum Potts measures. In [AE16] Adams and Eyers considered three models in which the Hamiltonian takes the form

$$
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\eta \in \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta} \subset \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)} \psi(\eta)+\sum_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{m, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta c} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \phi(\tau)\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\tau}}(\tau)\right)
$$

for $m \in\{2,3\}$. In all three $\psi$ was chosen to be the hard-core potential

$$
\psi(\{x, y\}):= \begin{cases}\infty & \text { if }|x-y|<\delta_{0} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Since the Delaunay graph is a nearest neighbour graph, $\psi$ ensures that no two particles are within $\delta_{0}$ of each other. The three choices of $m$ and $\phi$ were


Figure 2.3: A graph of $\psi+\phi_{1}$.
as follows, where $\beta>0$ is a parameter which adjusts the strength of the interaction.

1. $m=2$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{1}(\{x, y\}):=\log \left(1+\beta\left(\frac{\delta_{0}}{|x-y|}\right)^{3}\right) \tag{2.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. $m=3$ and

$$
\phi_{2}(\tau):=\log \left(1+\beta \alpha(\tau)^{3}\right),
$$

where $\alpha(\tau)$ is the smallest interior angle of $\tau$,
3. $m=3$ and

$$
\phi_{3}(\tau):= \begin{cases}\beta & \text { if } \alpha(\tau) \geq \alpha_{0} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

where $\alpha_{0} \in(0, \pi / 3)$.
Interaction 1 discourages short edges and interactions 2 and 3 encourage the presence of triangles with small angles. All three models were shown to exhibit a phase transition when the parameters are chosen appropriately ( $\beta$ \& $z$ sufficiently large and $\alpha_{0}$ sufficiently small). For the precise statements see [AE16][Theorems $2.4 \& 2.6]$.

Adams and Eyers also studied a system with no background interaction and a finite range type interaction in [AE19]. They considered the Hamiltonian

$$
H_{\Delta, \boldsymbol{\omega}}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\eta=\{\boldsymbol{x}, \boldsymbol{y}\} \in \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta c} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)} \log \left(1+\beta|x-y|^{-3-\epsilon}\right) \mathbb{1}_{\{|x-y| \leq R\}}\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\eta}}(\eta)\right)
$$

where $\beta, R>0$. It was shown that for any $R, \epsilon>0$ a phase transition occurs for sufficiently large values of $\beta$ and $z$ (for the precise statement see [AE19][Theorem 1.4 and Remark 1.5(c)]).

## Chapter 3

## Delaunay Potts models with triangle interactions

Here we consider a Delaunay Potts model with interactions between the triples of points which are the triangles (2-simplices) of the Delaunay triangulation. This is in contrast to the models in section 2.5 which have interactions based at least in part on the relationship between pairs of points (the 1 -simplices). We consider a hardcore background interaction which places upper and lower bounds on the circumradius of each triangle and a lower bound on the interior angles of each triangle. The edge lengths can therefore be bounded from above and below, so the restrictions here are stronger than those imposed in the models from [AE16]. We will show that a translation invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measure exists when the activity $z$ is large enough and that there is a phase transition for certain values of the model parameters.

### 3.1 Definitions

For a triangle $\tau \in \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 3}$ whose points are non-collinear, let $A(\tau)$ denote its area, $\delta(\tau)$ its circumradius and $\alpha(\tau)$ the size of its smallest interior angle. The background and type potentials we consider in this chapter are

$$
\psi(\tau):= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } \delta(\tau) \in(r, R) \text { and } \alpha(\tau)>\alpha_{0} \\ \infty & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\phi(\tau):=\log \left(1+\beta A(\tau)^{-1}\right) .
$$

respectively, where $\beta>0, \alpha_{0} \in(0, \pi / 3)$ and $0<r<R<\infty$. Recall from (2.3.2) that the hypergraph potential $\varphi: \operatorname{Del}_{3} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$ is given by

$$
\varphi(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}):=\psi(\tau)+\phi(\tau)\left(1-\delta_{\sigma_{\omega}}(\tau)\right) .
$$

### 3.2 Results

Theorem 3.2.1. (Existence.) If $\beta>0$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
z & >z_{0}^{\operatorname{ex}}\left(\beta, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right) \\
& :=\frac{\left(1+6 \rho_{0}\right)^{6}}{3 \pi R^{2} \rho_{0}^{2}\left(1-6 \rho_{0}\right)^{4}}\left(1+\frac{\beta\left(1+6 \rho_{0}\right)^{6}}{3^{3 / 2} R^{2}\left(1-6 \rho_{0}\right)^{11 / 2}\left(1-2 \rho_{0}\right)^{1 / 2}}\right)^{2} \tag{3.2.1}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)} \wedge \frac{\left(1-\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{2}}{2 \cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)-1}, \tag{3.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

then there exists a translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measure for $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}, z$ and $\varphi$.

Theorem 3.2.2. (Phase Transition.) Let $\alpha_{0}<\sin ^{-1}(3 / 64)$, and $64 r<$ $3 R$. There exists $\beta_{0}\left(q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right), z_{0}\left(\beta, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right)>0$ such that for all $\beta>$ $\beta_{0}\left(q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right)$ and $z>z_{0}\left(\beta, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right)$ there exist at least $q$ translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measures for $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}, z$ and $\varphi$.

Remark 3.2.3. In fact, these results also hold for the type potentials

$$
\phi(\tau):=\log \left(1+\beta A(\tau)^{-k}\right)
$$

when $k>0$, albeit with different values of $z_{0}$ and $\beta_{0}$.


Figure 3.1: A pseudo-periodic configuration with $\rho<\frac{1}{2 \sqrt{3}}$.

### 3.3 Existence proof

To prove that a translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measure exists we will verify that the hypotheses of Theorem 2.1.7 are met. For $(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\omega}) \in$ $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}$ the ball $B(\tau)$ is a horizon for $\varphi$ satisfying the requirements of ( $\mathbf{R}$ ) since $\omega \cap B(\tau)=\tau$. ( $\mathbf{S})$ is trivially satisfied since $\varphi \geq 0$. We will show that $(\mathbf{U})$ is satisfied when

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\ell & \ell / 2  \tag{3.3.1}\\
0 & \sqrt{3} \ell / 2
\end{array}\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Gamma}=\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{B}:=\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{C}: \omega=\{x\} \text { for some } x \in B\right\} \tag{3.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B=B(0, \rho \ell)$ is the ball of radius $\rho \ell$ around the origin and the parameters $\rho, \ell>0$ are chosen appropriately. We assume that $\rho<\frac{1}{2 \sqrt{3}}$, in which case for every pseudo-periodic configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{B}}$, each point $\boldsymbol{x} \in \boldsymbol{\omega}$ has 6 neighbours and the Delaunay triangulation becomes a perturbed triangular lattice ([Nol13, Remark 2.5]) as shown in figure 3.1. In this case the length of
each edge lies in the interval $(\ell(1-2 \rho), \ell(1+2 \rho))$. Thus by the law of cosines

$$
\begin{aligned}
\cos (\alpha(\tau)) & \leq \frac{2 \ell^{2}(1+2 \rho)^{2}-\ell^{2}(1-2 \rho)^{2}}{2 \ell^{2}(1-2 \rho)^{2}} \\
& =\left(\frac{1+2 \rho}{1-2 \rho}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$. The roots of the quadratic $(1+2 \rho)^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)(1-2 \rho)^{2}$ are $\frac{\left(1 \pm\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{2}}{2 \cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)-1}$, and so since $\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)>\frac{1}{2}$ we have the following result.

Lemma 3.3.1. If $\rho<\frac{\left(1-\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{2}}{2 \cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)-1} \wedge \frac{1}{2 \sqrt{3}}$ then for any pseudo-periodic configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{\bar{B}}}$,

$$
\alpha(\tau)>\alpha_{0} \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)
$$

By Lemma A.0.2,

$$
\frac{\ell(1-2 \rho)}{\sqrt{3}} \leq \delta(\tau)
$$

for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}(\omega)$. If we further assume that $\rho<\frac{1}{6}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<L(\rho):=\frac{1-6 \rho}{\sqrt{3}} \leq \frac{\delta(\tau)}{\ell} \tag{3.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, the circumradius $\delta$ of a triangle with area $A$ and edge lengths $a, b$ and $c$ is $\frac{a b c}{4 A}$, so we have

$$
\delta(\tau) \leq \frac{\ell^{3}(1+2 \rho)^{3}}{4 A(\tau)}
$$

The lower bound

$$
\begin{align*}
A(\tau) & \geq \sqrt{3 \ell(1-2 \rho)(2 \ell(1-2 \rho)-\ell(1+2 \rho))^{3}} \\
& =\ell^{2} \sqrt{3(1-2 \rho)(1-6 \rho)^{3}} \tag{3.3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

can be obtained using Heron's formula, which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(\rho):=\frac{(1+6 \rho)^{3}}{\sqrt{3}(1-6 \rho)^{2}} \geq \frac{(1+2 \rho)^{3}}{\sqrt{3(1-2 \rho)(1-6 \rho)^{3}}} \geq \frac{\delta(\tau)}{\ell} . \tag{3.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

These inequalities are used to prove the following result.
Proposition 3.3.2. If $\rho<\rho_{0}\left(r, R, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)} \wedge \frac{\left(1-\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{2}}{2 \cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)-1}$ then $\frac{r}{L(\rho)}<\frac{R}{U(\rho)}$. Furthermore, if $\ell \in\left(\frac{r}{L(\rho)}, \frac{R}{U(\rho)}\right)$ then all pseudo-periodic configurations $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{B}}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta(\tau) \in(r, R) \text { and } \alpha(\tau)>\alpha_{0} \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) . \tag{3.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The first part is just a simple rearrangement:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho & <\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)}, \\
& \Longrightarrow(1+6 \rho) r^{1 / 3}<(1-6 \rho) R^{1 / 3}, \\
& \Longrightarrow \frac{r}{R}<\left(\frac{1-6 \rho}{1+6 \rho}\right)^{3}=\frac{L(\rho)}{U(\rho)}, \\
& \Longrightarrow \frac{r}{L(\rho)}<\frac{R}{U(\rho)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\rho<\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)}<\frac{1}{6}<\frac{1}{2 \sqrt{3}}$ we can apply Lemma 3.3.1 and inequalities (3.3.3) \& (3.3.5) to obtain

$$
r<\ell L(\rho) \leq \delta(\tau) \leq \ell U(\rho)<R
$$

and $\alpha(\tau)>\alpha_{0}$ for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ when $\ell \in\left(\frac{r}{L(\rho)}, \frac{R}{U(\rho)}\right)$.
Suppose $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \overline{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}, \boldsymbol{\zeta} \in \boldsymbol{\Omega}_{\Delta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$. There exists $k \in \mathbb{R}$ (independent of $\boldsymbol{\omega}, \Delta$ and $\boldsymbol{\zeta}$ ) such that $B(\tau) \subset \Delta \oplus k$, since if $B(\tau)$ protrudes too far outside of $\Delta$ then $B(\tau) \cap \omega_{\Delta^{c}} \neq \emptyset$. Therefore if $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta \oplus k}^{\prime}=\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta \oplus k}$ then $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}\right)$, which implies $\varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}\right)=\varphi\left(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \boldsymbol{\zeta} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}\right)$. (U1) is then satisfied with $r_{\Gamma} \leq k<\infty$.

To prove (U2), we need an upper bound on $c_{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}$. If (3.3.6) holds then
$\psi(\tau)=0$, and so utilising the lower bound (3.3.4) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}} \leq \frac{6}{3} \log \left(1+\frac{\beta}{\ell^{2} \sqrt{3(1-2 \rho)(1-6 \rho)^{3}}}\right)<\infty . \tag{3.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, $e^{z|C|} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{C}^{z}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma})=z|B|$, so if

$$
z>\frac{1}{\pi \rho^{2} \ell^{2}}\left(1+\frac{\beta}{\ell^{2} \sqrt{3(1-2 \rho)(1-6 \rho)^{3}}}\right)^{2}
$$

then (U3) is satisfied. Thus far we have proved the following:
Proposition 3.3.3. If $\beta>0$,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\rho<\rho_{0}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)} \wedge \frac{\left(1-\left(\frac{1}{2}+\cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\right)^{2}}{2 \cos \left(\alpha_{0}\right)-1}, \\
\ell \in\left(\frac{r}{L(\rho)}, \frac{R}{U(\rho)}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
z>z_{0}^{\prime}(\beta, \rho, \ell):=\frac{1}{\pi \rho^{2} \ell^{2}}\left(1+\frac{\beta}{\ell^{2} \sqrt{3(1-2 \rho)(1-6 \rho)^{3}}}\right)^{2} \tag{3.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

then there exists a translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measure for $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}, z$ and $\varphi$.

Since the lower bound on $z$ is continuous at $(\rho, \ell)=\left(\rho_{0}, \frac{R}{U(\rho)}\right)$, we can replace $\rho$ with $\rho_{0}$ and $\ell$ with $\frac{R}{U(\rho)}$. The condition on $z$ then becomes
$z>z_{0}^{\operatorname{ex}}\left(\beta, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{\left(1+6 \rho_{0}\right)^{6}}{3 \pi R^{2} \rho_{0}^{2}\left(1-6 \rho_{0}\right)^{4}}\left(1+\frac{\beta\left(1+6 \rho_{0}\right)^{6}}{3^{3 / 2} R^{2}\left(1-6 \rho_{0}\right)^{11 / 2}\left(1-2 \rho_{0}\right)^{1 / 2}}\right)^{2}$,
and therefore Theorem 3.2.1 can be seen as a consequence of Proposition 3.3.3. Remark 3.3.4. $z_{0}^{\mathrm{ex}}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}\right) \rightarrow \infty$ as $\alpha_{0} \rightarrow \pi / 6$ or $\frac{R^{1 / 3}-r^{1 / 3}}{6\left(R^{1 / 3}+r^{1 / 3}\right)} \rightarrow 0$.

### 3.4 Phase transition proof

To prove Theorem 3.2.2 we use a coarse graining procedure to obtain a lower bound on $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(C(k) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right)$, and then apply Proposition 2.3.6 and Theorem 2.3.5. Before specifying the unmarked hypergraph structure $\hat{\mathcal{H}}$ and the parameter $\hat{p}$, we will first prove some statements about the measure $M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$. In particular we consider the effect of augmenting a configuration by an additional particle

### 3.4.1 Augmenting a configuration by a particle

The situation here differs from the case of a classical many-body interaction since adding a point $x$ does not merely result in additional interaction terms representing the interaction between $x$ and the other particles. Instead, when the particle $x$ is added, some hyperedges are created and others are destroyed. The result of this is that for $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega_{\Delta}$ and $x \in \Delta$, both $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ and $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup\{x\}\right)$ may contain terms which are not present in the other. It is thus possible (depending on $\psi$ ) that $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)=\infty$ and $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup\{x\}\right)<\infty$. In this case the function $e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}(\cdot)}$ is called non-hereditary [DVJ08, Definition 10.4.IV]. We start with the point insertion lemma which expresses that the circumradius of each 'new' triangle (when $x$ is added) is less than the circumradius of particular 'old' triangles. The point insertion lemma formalises an argument found in section 12.2.6 (page 462) of [Lis99], with some details filled in.

The following sets contain the tiles that remain intact, the ones that are created, and those that are destroyed when adding the point $x_{0}$ to an unmarked configuration $\omega$. From now on we will write $\omega \cup x_{0}$ rather than $\omega \cup\left\{x_{0}\right\}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\text {ext }}:=\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \cap \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega \cup x_{0}\right)=\left\{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega): x_{0} \notin \overline{B(\tau)}\right\}, \\
& T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{+}:=\operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega \cup x_{0}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)=\left\{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega \cup x_{0}\right): x_{0} \in \tau\right\}, \\
& T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}:=\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega \cup x_{0}\right)=\left\{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega): x_{0} \in \overline{B(\tau)}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

An example is shown in figure 3.2. The area covered by the triangles in $T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}$ ( or $T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{+}$) is shown in grey and referred to as the Delaunay cavity created by


Figure 3.2: Augmenting the configuration $\omega$ by a point $x_{0}$.
$x_{0}$.
Lemma 3.4.1. (Point insertion lemma.) Suppose $\tau=\left\{x_{0}, y, z\right\} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega \cup$ $\left.x_{0}\right)$ and let $\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}$ denote the two triangles in $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ which have $\{y, z\}$ as a subset. Then

$$
\delta(\tau) \leq \max \left(\delta\left(\tau_{1}\right), \delta\left(\tau_{2}\right)\right)
$$

Proof. Without loss of generality, let $\tau_{1}=\{v, y, z\} \in T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}$and $\tau_{2}=\{u, y, z\} \in$ $T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\mathrm{ext}}$ (see figure 3.3). Let $C_{\tau}$ denote the circumcentre of $\tau$. Consider the two half planes separated by the line $\overleftrightarrow{x y}$ passing through $x$ and $y$. We will show that if $C_{\tau}$ is in the same half-plane as $v$ then $\delta(\tau) \leq \delta\left(\tau_{1}\right)$ and if $C_{\tau}$ is in the same half plane as $u$ then $\delta(\tau) \leq \delta\left(\tau_{2}\right)$.

In the former case, the angle $\theta_{1}$ subtended by the chord $\overline{x y}$ at $v$ is less than the angle $\theta_{2}$ subtended by $\overline{x y}$ at $x_{0}$. This can be seen by extending the line $\overline{y x_{0}}$ until it intersects the circumcircle of $\tau_{1}$ (figure 3.4a), which is possible since $x_{0}$ lies inside the circumcircle of $\tau_{1}$. Since $C_{\tau}$ lies on the same side of $\overline{x y}$ as $v$, there is a right angle subtended by $\overline{x y}$ at some point along $\overline{x x_{0}}$ or $\overline{y x_{0}}$ (figure 3.4b), so $\theta_{2} \leq \frac{\pi}{2}$. From the relationship $\theta_{1} \leq \theta_{2} \leq \frac{\pi}{2}$ we can conclude that

$$
\delta(\tau)=\frac{\mathrm{d}(x, y)}{2 \sin \left(\theta_{2}\right)} \leq \frac{\mathrm{d}(x, y)}{2 \sin \left(\theta_{1}\right)}=\delta\left(\tau_{1}\right)
$$

Now suppose that $C_{\tau}$ is in the same half plane as $u$. If $C \tau_{2}$ is farther


Figure 3.3


Figure 3.4


Figure 3.5
away from $\overline{x y}$ than $C_{\tau}$, then it is clear that $\delta(\tau)=\mathrm{d}\left(x, C_{\tau}\right) \leq \mathrm{d}\left(x, C_{\tau_{2}}\right)=\delta\left(\tau_{2}\right)$, as required.

Conversely, if $C_{\tau_{2}}$ is between $\overline{x y}$ and $C_{\tau}$ then $\delta\left(\tau_{2}\right) \leq \delta(\tau)$. In fact

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta\left(\tau_{2}\right) \leq \delta(\tau)<\mathrm{d}\left(u, C_{\tau}\right) \tag{3.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

since the point $u$ is outside of $\overline{B(\tau)}$. But we also have (see figure 3.5)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\delta(\tau)^{2} & =\mathrm{d}\left(x, C_{\tau}\right)^{2} \\
& =\mathrm{d}\left(x, C_{\tau_{2}}\right)^{2}+\mathrm{d}\left(C_{\tau}, C_{\tau_{2}}\right)^{2}+2 \mathrm{~d}\left(C_{\tau}, C_{\tau_{2}}\right) \mathrm{d}\left(C_{\tau_{2}}, \frac{x+y}{2}\right) \\
& =\mathrm{d}\left(u, C_{\tau_{2}}\right)^{2}+\mathrm{d}\left(C_{\tau}, C_{\tau_{2}}\right)^{2}+2 \mathrm{~d}\left(C_{\tau}, C_{\tau_{2}}\right) \mathrm{d}\left(C_{\tau_{2}}, \frac{x+y}{2}\right) \\
& \geq \mathrm{d}\left(u, C_{\tau}\right)^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

which contradicts (3.4.1).

Let $\omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z q}^{\psi}$. Recall that $M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ denotes the marginal distribution $C_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}(\cdot, \mathcal{E})$. The Radon-Nikodym density of $M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ with respect to $P_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$ is

$$
h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right):=\mathbb{1}_{\left\{\omega_{\Delta^{c}=\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}}\right\}} \frac{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)}{Z_{\Delta}^{z}(\omega)} \int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} T) .
$$

The next lemma gives a lower bound on the ratio

$$
\frac{h_{\Delta \Delta \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)}{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)},
$$

which is known as the Papangelou conditional intensity. Recall that according to the hyperedge drawing mechanism $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}$ each edge in $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega)$ is opened independently according to the probabilities given in (2.3.5). Let $\mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\mathrm{ext}}, \mu_{x_{o}, \omega}^{+}$ and $\mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}$denote the measures which open the edges in $T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\mathrm{ext}}, T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{+}$and $T_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}$ respectively with the same probabilities. Then

$$
\mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\mathrm{ext}} \otimes \mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{+}=\mu_{\omega \cup x_{0}, \Delta} \quad \text { and } \quad \mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{\mathrm{ext}} \otimes \mu_{x_{0}, \omega}^{-}=\mu_{\omega, \Delta} .
$$

Lemma 3.4.2. Suppose that $\omega \in \Omega_{\Delta, z q}^{\psi}, \omega^{\prime} \in \Omega$ with $\omega_{\Delta^{c}}=\omega_{\Delta^{c}}^{\prime}$, and $x_{0} \in$ $\Delta \backslash \omega^{\prime}$. If $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right), H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)<\infty$. Then

$$
\frac{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)}{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \geq q^{1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}} .
$$

Proof. The structure of this proof is the same as [AE19, Lemma 2.3] but the details are slightly different since we are dealing with triangle interactions rather than edge interactions.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)}{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} & =\frac{\int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}, T\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}, \Delta}(\mathrm{~d} T)}{\int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T\right)} \mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Delta}(\mathrm{d} T)} \\
& =\frac{\int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}, T_{1} \cup T_{2}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{1}\right)} q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{1}\right)} \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{\operatorname{ext}}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{1}\right) \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{2}\right)}{\int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3} \cup T_{4}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3}\right)} q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3}\right)} \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{\operatorname{ext}}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{3}\right) \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{-}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{4}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Opening more triangles can only reduce the number of connected components, so

$$
N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3} \cup T_{4}\right) \leq N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3}\right) .
$$

Furthermore, since $H_{\Delta, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)<\infty$ the point $x_{0}$ is connected to at most $\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}$ other points in the graph $\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}, \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)\right)$, so

$$
N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}, T_{1} \cup T_{2}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{1}\right) \geq 1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}} .
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x_{0}\right)}{h_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} & \geq \frac{\int q^{1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}} q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{1}\right)} \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{e \operatorname{ext}}\left(\mathrm{~d} T_{1}\right) \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{2}\right)}{\int q^{N_{c c}\left(\omega^{\prime}, T_{3}\right)} \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{\operatorname{ext}}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{3}\right) \mu_{x_{0}, \omega^{\prime}}^{-}\left(\mathrm{d} T_{4}\right)} \\
& =q^{1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 3.4.2 Coarse graining

In order to prove the existence of a uniform lower bound on $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}(C(k, m) \leftrightarrow$ $\Lambda_{n}^{c}$ ), we will devise a criterion by which, according to the underlying configuration $\boldsymbol{\omega}$, each cell $C(k, m)$ (defined in 2.1.9) is declared open or closed. This criterion will be devised in such a way that there exists an infinite connected component containing a point in $C(k, m)$ if $C(k, m)$ belongs to an infinite connected component of open boxes. We call this procedure of moving from points to cells coarse graining. Formally, for each $n$ we will construct a map $X_{n}: \boldsymbol{\Omega} \rightarrow\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2}}$ where $\boldsymbol{\omega} \in\left\{C(k, m) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right\}$ if $(k, m)$ belongs to an infinite open cluster in $X_{n}(\boldsymbol{\omega})$. The cell $C(k, m)$ is considered to be open if $X_{n}(\boldsymbol{\omega})(k, m)=1$. The desired lower bound will then be obtained by making a stochastic comparison between the law of $X_{n}$ and a Bernoulli product measure using Corollary 2.4.2.

Let $M$ and $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ be as in (3.3.1) and (3.3.2) respectively, and let the parameters $\rho, \ell$ and $z$ satisfy the requirements of Proposition 3.3.3 with $z q$ in place of $z$. Then ( $\mathbf{U}$ ) is satisfied (in addition to (R) and (S)). The same argument as in the previous section can be used to show that these conditions are also satisfied in the unmarked regime with respect to $\psi$ instead of $\varphi$, and $\Gamma=\Gamma^{B}:=\left\{\omega \in \Omega_{C}: \omega=\{x\}\right.$ for some $\left.x \in B\right\}$ instead of $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$. The situation is simpler since in this case $c_{\Gamma}=0$. By Remark 2.1.8, $\boldsymbol{\Gamma} \subset \Omega_{\Lambda_{n}, z q}^{\varphi}$ and $\Gamma \subset \Omega_{\Lambda_{n}, z q}^{\psi}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, where $\Lambda_{n}=\bigcup_{k, m \in\{-n \ldots, n\}} C(k, m)$.

The cells $(C(k, m))_{k, m \in \mathbb{Z}}$ form a partition of the plane into rhombi of length $\ell$. Let us split each cell into 64 smaller sub-cells of length $\ell / 8$ denoted
$\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)_{0 \leq i, j \leq 7}$, where

$$
C_{k, m}^{i, j}:=\left\{M x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: x-(k, m) \in\left[\frac{i-4}{8}, \frac{i-3}{8}\right) \times\left[\frac{j-4}{8}, \frac{j-3}{8}\right)\right\} .
$$

Let $F_{k, m}$ denote the event that there is least one particle in each sub-cell of $C(k, m)$ and $O_{k, m}$ denote the event that additionally all points in $C(k, m)$ are open:

$$
\begin{aligned}
F_{k, m} & :=\bigcap_{0 \leq i, j \leq 7}\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \Omega:\left|\omega \cap C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right| \geq 1\right\} \\
O_{k, m} & :=\left\{\boldsymbol{\omega} \in \Omega: \sigma_{\omega}(x)=1 \text { for all } x \in \omega_{C_{k, m}}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

The map $X_{n}: \Omega \rightarrow\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2}}$ is constructed by opening the sites $(k, m)$ inside $\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$ for which $F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m}$ occurs, and opening the sites outside $\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$ for which $O_{k, m}$ occures, i.e

$$
X_{n}(\boldsymbol{\omega})(k, m):= \begin{cases}\mathbb{1}_{F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m}}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) & \text { if }|k|,|m| \leq n \\ \mathbb{1}_{O_{k, m}}(\boldsymbol{\omega}) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

$X_{n}$ is therefore a stochastically decreasing sequence. To complete the definition of $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}$, let $\hat{\mathcal{H}}=\operatorname{Del}_{3}$ and

$$
\hat{p}(\tau) \equiv \hat{p}=\frac{1}{\frac{3 \sqrt{3}}{4 \beta} q^{2} R^{2}+1} .
$$

For a given circumradius, the triangle $\tau$ with maximal area is the equilateral triangle, for which $A(\tau)=\frac{3 \sqrt{3}}{4} \delta(\tau)$. Therefore, if $H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{p} & \leq \frac{1}{q^{2} \beta^{-1} A(\tau)+1} \\
\Longrightarrow \frac{\hat{p}}{1-\hat{p}} & \leq \frac{\beta}{q^{2} A(\tau)}
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)$. The comparison inequalities (2.3.11) are satisfied
since

$$
\frac{p_{\Delta}(\tau)}{q^{2}\left(1-p_{\Delta}(\tau)\right)}=\frac{1-e^{-\phi(\tau)}}{q^{2} e^{-\phi(\tau)}}=\frac{e^{\phi(\tau)}-1}{q^{2}}=\frac{\beta}{q^{2} A(\tau)},
$$

for all $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)$, and therefore $\mu_{\omega^{\prime}, \Lambda_{n}}^{q} \succcurlyeq \hat{\mu}_{\omega^{\prime}}$ almost surely with respect to $M_{\Delta, \omega}^{z}$. Hence the premises of Theorem 2.3.5 and Proposition 2.3.6 are satisfied, so it remains to show that there exists $c>0$ such that $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}(C(k, m) \leftrightarrow$ $\left.\Lambda_{n}^{c}\right) \geq c$ for all $n$ and $\omega \in \Gamma$. The following lemma shows that a uniform lower bound on the percolation probability of the law of $X_{n}$ is sufficient.

Lemma 3.4.3. If $\omega \in \Gamma, \sigma_{\omega}(x) \equiv 1, H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty$ and $X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \in$ $\{(k, m) \leftrightarrow \infty\}$, then $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime} \in\left\{C(k, m) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right\}$. Therefore

$$
\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(C(k, m) \leftrightarrow \Lambda_{n}^{c}\right) \geq \mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}((k, m) \leftrightarrow \infty)
$$

where $\mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}$ is the law of $X_{n}$.
Proof. For $k \in\{-n, \ldots, n-1\},|m| \leq n$ let $x_{k, m}, x_{k+1, m} \in \omega_{\Lambda^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}$ denote the points whose Voronoi cells contain the centers of $C(k, m)$ and $C(k+1, m)$. The Voronoi cell associated to $x$ is given by

$$
\operatorname{Vor}_{\omega_{\Lambda} \subset \cup \omega^{\prime}}(x):=\left\{z \in \mathbb{R}^{2}:|x-z| \leq|w-z| \text { for all } w \in \omega_{\Lambda^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right\} .
$$

If $X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)(k, m)=X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)(k+1, m)=1$ then $\boldsymbol{x}_{k, m}$ is connected to $\boldsymbol{x}_{k+1, m}$ via a path whose points are located in

$$
\left\{\bigcup_{2 \leq i \leq 7,2 \leq j \leq 5} C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right\} \cup\left\{\bigcup_{0 \leq i \leq 5,2 \leq j \leq 5} C_{k+1, m}^{i, j}\right\} .
$$

This can be seen via the same argument as [AE19, Lemma 2.7, step (iv)]. In fact, the points can be joined via a path whose points all have Voronoi cells intersecting the line segment between the centers of the cells $C(k, m)$ and $C(k+1, m)$.

Furthermore, the same applies if $|m| \leq n$ and $X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)(n, m)=$ $X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)(n+1, m)=1$; there is a path between $\boldsymbol{x}_{n, m}$ and the point in $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{C(n+1, m)}$ (recall that $\rho<\frac{1}{6}$ ) via a path whose points all have Voronoi cells intersecting the line segment between the centers of the cells $C(n, m)$ and


Figure 3.6: An illustration of two open cells meeting the boundary of $\Lambda_{n}$, which is represented by the bold line. The open cells in $\Lambda_{n}$ have at least one point in each of their 64 sub-cells.
$C(n+1, m)$. Figure 3.6 shows an example of a path passing through two open cells and across the boundary of $\Lambda_{n}$.

Note that we have only discussed horizontal crossings between cells $C(k, m)$ and $C(k+1, m)$. The proof for vertical crossings can be performed similarly. It is now clear that if there is an infinite path $\left(k_{r}, m_{r}\right)_{r=1}^{s}$ in $X_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n}} \cup \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right)$ with $\left(k_{1}, m_{1}\right)=(k, m)$ and $\left|k_{s}\right|,\left|m_{s}\right|>n$ then there is a path in $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{\Lambda_{n} c} \cup \boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}$ connecting $\boldsymbol{x}_{k, m} \in \boldsymbol{\omega}_{C(k, m)}^{\prime}$ to the point in $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{C\left(k_{s}, m_{s}\right)}$.

### 3.4.3 Percolation of $\mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}$.

It remains to show that the assumptions of Corollary 2.4.2 are satisfied for the measures $\left(\mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}$. The measures $\mathcal{L}_{X_{n}}$ can be considered as measures on $\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2} \cup \mathcal{B}}$ where all bonds are opened with probability 1 . For any $(k, m) \in$ $\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$ and $X \in\{0,1\}^{\mathbb{Z}^{2}}$ satisfying $X(i, j)=1$ for all $(i, j) \notin\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(X_{n}(k, m)=1 \mid X_{n}(i, j)=X(i, j) \text { for }(i, j) \neq(k, m)\right)  \tag{3.4.2}\\
= & \hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m} \mid \mathcal{F}_{\left.C(k, m)^{c}\right)}\right) \mid X_{n}(i, j)=X(i, j) \text { for }(i, j) \neq(k, m)\right) \\
\geq & \underset{\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega_{C(k, m)^{c}}}{\operatorname{ess} \inf } \hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m} \mid \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right), \tag{3.4.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where the essential infimum is taken with respect to $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }} \circ \mathbf{p r}_{C(k, m)^{c}}{ }^{-1}$. Since we are dealing with standard Borel spaces, the regular conditional probability in (3.4.3) is guaranteed to exist. For $(k, m) \notin\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{2}$, there is only one point in each cell, so the expression (3.4.2) is equal to $\hat{p}$, which is in turn greater than (3.4.3) since the latter is at most $\hat{p}^{64}$. Therefore it is sufficient to show that (3.4.3) is greater than the critical probability for site percolation on $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$, denoted $p_{c}^{\text {site }}\left(\mathbb{Z}^{2}\right)$.

First we will bound the probability of the event $F_{k, m}$ from below. For $\Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}$ the regular conditional probability

$$
\Omega_{\Delta^{c}} \times \mathcal{F} \ni\left(\omega^{\prime}, B\right) \mapsto M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(B \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\Delta^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right)
$$

is given $M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{\Delta^{c}}^{-1}$ almost everywhere by the function

$$
\left(\omega^{\prime}, B\right) \mapsto \frac{\int \mathbb{1}_{B}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega^{\prime \prime}\right) h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega^{\prime \prime}\right) e^{H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime \prime} \cup \omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime \prime}\right)}{\int h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) e^{H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)} .
$$

The proof of this follows that of the analogous case in [Eye14, page 40-41]. For the rest of this section let $\epsilon=\frac{1}{2}\left(1-p_{c}^{\text {site }}\left(\mathbb{Z}^{2}\right)\right)$.

Lemma 3.4.4. Suppose $\alpha_{0}<\sin ^{-1}\left(\frac{3}{64}\right), 64 r<3 R$, $\ell \in\left(\frac{64}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right), \sqrt{3} R\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
z>z_{0}^{\prime \prime}\left(\ell, q, r, R, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{64 q^{\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}-1}}{\epsilon\left(\frac{\ell}{8}-\frac{8}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)\right)^{2}} . \tag{3.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for any pseudo-periodic boundary condition $\omega \in \Gamma$ and any sub-cell $C_{k, m}^{i, j}$ with $|k|,|m| \leq n$,

$$
M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}} \geq 1 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right)>1-\frac{\epsilon}{64} .
$$

for $M_{\Lambda_{n, \omega}}^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}^{-1}$-almost all $\omega^{\prime}$.
Proof. Assume $M_{\Lambda_{n, \omega}}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=0 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right)>0$, else the result is trivial.

This implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(\tau)=0 \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda_{n}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) . \tag{3.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}$ to be the rhombus of side length $d=\frac{\ell}{8}-\frac{8}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)$ which is a contraction of $C_{k, m}^{i, j}$ about its center point (see figure 3.7). We first claim that for $M_{\Lambda_{n, \omega}}^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)}^{-1}{ }^{c}$-almost all $\omega^{\prime}$ and $x \in \nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(\tau)=0 \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda_{n}}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x\right) \tag{3.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

It suffices to only consider the triangles $\tau \in T_{x, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}$. Any edge $\{x, y\} \in \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup\right.$ $x$ ) must satisfy $|x-y|>\frac{\sqrt{3}}{4}\left(\frac{1}{8} \ell-d\right)=2\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)>2 r$. Thus $\delta(\tau)>r$ for all $\tau \in T_{x, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}$. By Lemma 3.4.1 and (3.4.5) we also have $\delta(\tau)<R$.
By the same argument used to compare the angles $\theta_{1}$ and $\theta_{2}$ in Lemma 3.4.1, if $\theta$ is an angle belonging to a triangle $\tau \in T_{x, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}$which is subtended at $x$ then $\theta \geq \alpha_{0}$. All edges $\{x, y\} \in \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x\right)$ must have length at least $\frac{\sqrt{3}}{4}\left(\frac{1}{8} \ell-d\right) \geq 2 R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)$, so by the law of sines if $\tau \in T_{x, \omega^{\prime}}^{+}$and $\theta$ is an angle of $\tau$ not subtended at $x_{0}$ then

$$
\sin (\theta) \geq \frac{2 R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)}{2 \delta(\tau)} \geq \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)
$$

and so $\theta \geq \alpha_{0}$ since we know that $\alpha_{0} \leq \pi / 3$. This completes the proof of (3.4.6). Together with (3.4.5) this implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime} \cup x\right)}=e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}\right)}=1 . \tag{3.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the second half of the proof we compute the lower bound by applying the formula

$$
\int f\left(\omega^{\prime \prime}\right) \Pi_{\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime \prime}\right)=e^{-z\left|\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}\right|} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^{n}}{n!} \int_{\left(\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{n}} f\left(\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right\}\right) \mathrm{d} x_{1}, . ., \mathrm{d} x_{n}
$$

(valid for bounded measurable functions $f: \Omega_{\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}} \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ ), restricting the domain of integration and applying (3.4.7) and Lemma 3.4.2. The computation
is as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}^{z}=1 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)}=\omega^{\prime}\right)}{M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}^{z}=0 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left.\left(C_{k, m}\right)^{\prime}\right)}=\omega^{\prime}\right)} \\
= & \frac{\int \mathbb{1}_{\left\{N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=1\right\}}\left(\omega^{\prime \prime}\right) h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega^{\prime \prime}\right) e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime} \cup \omega^{\prime \prime}\right)} \Pi_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime \prime}\right)}{\left.\int \mathbb{1}_{\left\{N_{C_{k, m}, j}^{i, j}\right.}=0\right\}}\left(\omega^{\prime \prime}\right) h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime \prime}\right) \\
= & \frac{z e^{-z\left|C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right|} \int_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}} h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x\right) e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{\psi}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime} \cup x\right)} \mathrm{d} x}{e^{-z\left|C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right|} h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \\
\geq & z \int_{\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}} \frac{h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup x\right)}{h_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \mathrm{d} x \\
\geq & z q^{1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}}\left|\nabla_{k, m}^{i, j}\right| \\
= & z q^{1-\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}}\left(\frac{\ell}{8}-\frac{8}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)\right)^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally,

$$
\begin{aligned}
M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}} \geq 1 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) & \geq 1-\frac{M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=1 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right)}{M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=0 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}^{i}=\omega^{\prime}\right)} \\
& \geq 1-\frac{q^{\frac{2 \pi}{\alpha_{0}}-1}}{z\left(\frac{\ell}{8}-\frac{8}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)\right)^{2}} \\
& >1-\frac{\epsilon}{64}
\end{aligned}
$$

by assumption (3.4.4).

Corollary 3.4.5. If the assumptions of Lemma 3.4.4 are satisfied, then

$$
M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(F_{k, m} \mid \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right)>1-\epsilon .
$$

for $M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}$-almost all $\omega^{\prime}$.


Figure 3.7

Proof.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(F_{k, m} \mid \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) \\
\geq & 1-\sum_{0 \leq i, j \leq 7} M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=0 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) \\
\geq & 1-\sum_{0 \leq i, j \leq 7} \int M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(N_{C_{k, m}^{i, j}}=0 \mid \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{i, j}\right)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z} \circ \operatorname{pr}_{\left(C_{k, m}^{c}\right)^{c}}^{-1}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \\
> & 1-\epsilon .
\end{aligned}
$$

The final component we need to finish the proof is an upper bound on the number of particles in a cell $C(k, l)$. If $H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty$ then $\{x, y\} \in$ $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda_{n}}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) \Longrightarrow|x-y| \geq 2 r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)$ by the law of sines. Since the Delaunay graph is a nearest neighbour graph, this means that no two particles are within a distance of $2 r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)$ of one another. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
m\left(\ell, r, \alpha_{0}\right):=\left(\frac{\ell+2 r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)}{r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)}\right)^{2}=\left(\frac{\ell}{r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)}+2\right)^{2} \tag{3.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is an upper bound on the number of non-overlapping circles with radius $r \sin \alpha_{0}$ that can fit inside a rhombus with side length $\ell+2 r \sin \alpha_{0}$, is an upper bound for $\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|$.

We can now prove the existence of the required lower bound on (3.4.3).

Proposition 3.4.6. Suppose $\alpha_{0}<\sin ^{-1}\left(\frac{3}{64}\right), 64 r<3 R$ and $\ell \in\left(\frac{64}{\sqrt{3}}(r \vee\right.$ $\left.\left.R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right), \sqrt{3} R\right)$. If

$$
\beta>\beta_{0}^{\prime}\left(\ell, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right):=\frac{\frac{3 \sqrt{3}}{4} q^{2} R^{2}}{(1-\epsilon)^{-1 / m\left(\ell, r, \alpha_{0}\right)}-1}
$$

and $z>z_{0}^{\prime \prime}\left(\ell, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right)$ then there exists $c>0$ such that for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, any $|k|,|m| \leq n$ and any pseudo-periodic boundary condition $\omega \in \Gamma$,

$$
\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m} \mid \mathbf{p r}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}\right) \geq c>0
$$

for $\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }} \circ \mathbf{p r}_{C(k, m)^{c}}^{-1}$-almost all $\boldsymbol{\omega}^{\prime}$.
Proof. Using the lower bound from Corollary 3.4.5 and the lower bound $\beta_{0}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{C}_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z, \text { site }}\left(F_{k, m} \cap O_{k, m} \mid \mathbf{p r}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) & \geq \hat{p}^{m} M_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}^{z}\left(F_{k, m} \mid \operatorname{pr}_{C(k, m)^{c}}=\omega^{\prime}\right) \\
& \geq\left(\frac{1}{\frac{3 \sqrt{3}}{4 \beta} q^{2} R^{2}+1}\right)^{m}(1-\epsilon) \\
& \geq\left(\frac{1}{(1-\epsilon)^{-\frac{1}{m}}}\right)^{m}(1-\epsilon) \\
& =(1-\epsilon)^{2} \\
& >1-2 \epsilon=p_{c}^{s i t e}\left(\mathbb{Z}^{2}\right)>0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Recall that at the beginning of section 3.4.2 we assumed that the parameters $\rho, \ell$ and $z q$ satisfied the requirements of Proposition 3.3.3. We need to check that these requirements can be satisfied simultaneously with those of the previous proposition. The only possible conflict relates to the parameter $\ell$. We require that $\ell \in\left(\frac{64}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right), \sqrt{3} R\right) \cap\left(\frac{r}{L(\rho)}, \frac{R}{U(\rho)}\right):=I_{0}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}, \rho\right)$. This set is non-empty for small enough $\rho$ since

$$
\frac{64}{\sqrt{3}}\left(r \vee R \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)\right)<\sqrt{3} R=\lim _{\rho \rightarrow 0} \frac{R}{U(\rho)}
$$

and

$$
\sqrt{3} R>\sqrt{3} r=\lim _{\rho \rightarrow 0} \frac{r}{L(\rho)} .
$$

We therefore have the following, from which Theorem 3.2.2 is derived by selecting particular values of $\rho$ and $\ell$.

Corollary 3.4.7. There exists $\rho_{0}^{\prime}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}\right)>0$ such that $I_{0} \neq \emptyset$ if $\rho<\rho_{0}^{\prime}$. Moreover, if

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha_{0} & <\sin ^{-1}(3 / 64), \\
64 r & <3 R, \\
\rho & <\rho_{0}^{\prime}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}\right), \\
\ell & \in I_{0}\left(R, r, \alpha_{0}, \rho\right), \\
\beta & >\beta_{0}\left(\ell, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right), \\
\text { and } \quad z & >z_{0}^{\prime \prime}\left(\ell, q, R, r, \alpha_{0}\right) \vee(1 / q) z_{0}^{\prime}(\beta, \rho, \ell)
\end{aligned}
$$

then there exists at least $q$ translation-invariant Delaunay continuum Potts measures for $\mathbf{D e l}_{3}, z$ and $\varphi$.

## Chapter 4

## Infinite Volume Delaunay Random Cluster Measures

The method that we employed in the previous chapter to prove that a phase transition occurs centers around the random cluster representation (Theorem 2.3.3), which provides a connection between the Delaunay continuum Potts distribution and the Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution in a bounded region $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. This connection was enough to prove the phase transition in the previous chapter. In this chapter we are interested in an infinite volume analogue of the Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution. This choice of direction is inspired by work on a similar model introduced by Dereudre and Houdebert [DH15] called the infinite volume continuum random cluster model, which is a Gibbs modification of the stationary Poisson Boolean model, defined using the DLR equations. The authors proved the existence of such a model and discovered a Fortuin-Kastelyn representation relating it to the Widom-Rowlinson model. This FK representation was previously known for the finite volume measures but the authors extended it to the infinite volume measures, which facilitated the extension of the phase transition results of [CCK95] and [GH96] for the Widom-Rowlinson model to the case of nondeterministic radii [Hou17]. This representation was subsequently leveraged to show that the Widom-Rowlinson model is unique for small activities using disagreement percolation [HTH19]. We hope that an investigation of Delaunay continuum random cluster measures in infinite volume might lead to similar insights for Delaunay continuum Potts measures.

In contrast to previous chapters we use the hypergraph structure $\mathrm{Del}_{2}$ instead of $\mathrm{Del}_{3}$ here. There is still a random cluster representation in this case (see [AE16]) so the motivations of the last paragraph are still relevant. Our configurations therefore consist of a locally finite set of points and a locally finite set of edges ( $k=2$ in equation (2.3.1)). Thus far we have only defined the finite volume Delaunay continuum random cluster model for the wired boundary condition (Definition 2.3.1). In this case the number of connected components $N_{c c}$ is always finite, and so the definition is straightforward. In this chapter we want to expand this definition to include arbitrary boundary conditions $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ and so we need to define a notion of the 'local' number of connected components.

The main result of this chapter is the existence of an infinite volume Delaunay continuum random cluster measure (Theorem 4.3.1). We require that the background potential satisfies two hardcore constraints and the edge probabilities (those assigned by $\mu_{\omega, \Delta}$ ) are bounded away from 0 and 1 . The proof follows an analogous approach to [DH15]. We begin by constructing a sequence of probability measures from the finite volume distributions and showing that it has an accumulation point. This is done using a compactness result relating to the specific entropy. Then we prove that the limit, after conditioning out the empty configuration, satisfies the DLR equations. In the course of the proof we show that the infinite volume measure has at most one infinite connected component.

### 4.1 Preliminaries

### 4.1.1 Sample spaces and sigma algebras

We use the definitions given in section 2.3.1, with $d=2$ and $\mathcal{H}=\operatorname{Del}_{2}$ (and so $k=2$ ), but some additional definitions are needed. For $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{4}$, let

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega_{\Delta} & :=\{\omega \in \Omega: \omega \subset \Delta\}, \\
\mathcal{E}_{\Lambda} & :=\{E \in \mathcal{E}: E \subset \Lambda\}, \\
\mathcal{G}_{\Delta, \Lambda} & :=\Omega_{\Delta} \times \mathcal{E}_{\Lambda} .
\end{aligned}
$$

$\Omega_{\Delta}=\left\{N_{\Delta^{c}}=0\right\}$ and $\mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}=\left\{N_{\Lambda^{c}}=0\right\}$ are $G_{\delta}$ sets and are therefore Polish. The associated Borel $\sigma$-algebras are the trace sigma algebras $\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}}:=\{A \cap$ $\left.\Omega_{\Delta}: A \in \mathcal{F}\right\}$ and $\left.\Sigma\right|_{\mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}}:=\left\{A \cap \mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}: A \in \Sigma\right\}$. The projection mappings $\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}^{1}: \Omega \rightarrow \Omega_{\Delta}, \omega \mapsto \omega_{\Delta}$, and $\operatorname{pr}_{\Lambda}^{2}: \mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}, E \mapsto E_{\Lambda}$ are measurable, and furthermore for sequences $\Delta_{n} \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda_{n} \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{4}$,

$$
\mathcal{F}=\sigma\left(\bigcup_{n \geq 1} \mathcal{F}_{\Delta_{n}}\right), \text { and } \Sigma=\sigma\left(\bigcup_{n \geq 1} \Sigma_{\Lambda_{n}}\right)
$$

where $\mathcal{F}_{\Delta}:=\left.\left(\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}^{1}\right)^{-1} \mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}}$ and $\Sigma_{\Lambda}:=\left.\left(\operatorname{pr}_{\Lambda}^{2}\right)^{-1} \Sigma\right|_{\mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}}$. In addition, the Borel $\sigma$-algebra on $\mathcal{G}_{\Delta, \Lambda}$ is $\left.\mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta, \Lambda}}=\left.\left.\mathcal{F}\right|_{\Omega_{\Delta}} \otimes \Sigma\right|_{\mathcal{E}_{\Lambda}}$, and

$$
\mathcal{A}=\sigma\left(\bigcup_{n \geq 1} \mathcal{F}_{\Delta_{n}} \times \bigcup_{n \geq 1} \Sigma_{\Lambda_{n}}\right)=\sigma\left(\bigcup_{n \geq 1} \mathcal{A}_{\Delta_{n}, \Lambda_{n}}\right)
$$

where $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta, \Lambda}:=\mathcal{F}_{\Delta} \otimes \Sigma_{\Lambda}$. From now on, we will only need to consider subregions of $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ of the form $\Delta^{2}$ for some $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, and so we will write $E_{\Delta}, \mathcal{E}_{\Delta}$ and $\Sigma_{\Delta}$ in place of $E_{\Delta^{2}}, \mathcal{E}_{\Delta^{2}}$ and $\Sigma_{\Delta^{2}}$ respectively. We also define $\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}:=\mathcal{G}_{\Delta, \Delta^{2}}, \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}:=$ $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta, \Delta^{2}}$, and the projection $\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}, G \mapsto G_{\Delta}:=\left(\omega_{\Delta}, E_{\Delta}\right)$.

### 4.1.2 Properties of Delaunay triangulations

The following lemmas describe the effect on the Delaunay triangulation when a configuration is changed in a bounded region. This knowledge will help us when implementing boundary conditions.

Proposition 4.1.1. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $\omega \in \Omega$,

$$
\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)=\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)
$$

Proof. If $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)$ then $\tau$ must satisfy

1. $|\tau|=3$,
2. $\tau \subset \omega$,
3. $B(\tau) \cap \omega=\emptyset$,
4. $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \Delta \neq \emptyset$,
5. $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \Lambda=\emptyset$,
and if $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$ then $\tau$ must satisfy $1,4,5$ and

$$
2^{\prime} \cdot \tau \subset \omega_{\Lambda^{c}} \quad \text { 3'. } B(\tau) \cap \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}=\emptyset
$$

But $2 \wedge 5 \Longleftrightarrow 2^{\prime} \wedge 5$ and $3 \wedge 5 \Longleftrightarrow 3^{\prime} \wedge 5$.
Corollary 4.1.2. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $\omega \in \Omega$,

$$
\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)=\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)
$$

Proof. $\eta \in \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)$ if and only if $\exists \tau_{1}, \tau_{2} \supset \eta$ where either both $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{2}$ belong to $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)$, or one belongs to $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash$ $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)$ and the other belongs to $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)$. But by Proposition 4.1.1 $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)=\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}(\omega)=$ $\operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$, which gives the result.

For $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$, and $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ we make the following definitions:

- $G^{\Delta}:=\left(\omega^{\Delta}, E^{\Delta}\right)$, where $\omega^{\Delta}:=\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}(\omega)$ and $E^{\Delta}:=E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega)$,
- $G^{\Delta, \Lambda}:=\left(\omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}, E^{\Delta, \Lambda}\right)$, where $\omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}:=\left(\omega^{\Delta}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}=\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}(\omega)\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}$ and $E^{\Delta, \Lambda}:=E^{\Delta} \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)=E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)$.

As we shall see later, our model is defined in such a way that if $G$ is chosen as a boundary condition for the finite volume distribution in $\Delta$ then $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$ remains fixed. We now present a few more lemmas which will be used implicitly throughout this chapter.

Lemma 4.1.3. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$,

$$
\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\Delta, \Lambda}=G^{\Delta, \Lambda}
$$

Proof. Let $\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)=\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\Delta, \Lambda}$. By definition $\omega^{\prime}=\left(\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}=\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta}$.
If $x \in \omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}$ then $x$ belongs to a triangle $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)$. If $\tau \notin \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$ then $\exists \tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$ with $x \in \tau^{\prime}$ whose circumcircle intersects $\Lambda$. But $\Lambda \subset \Delta$, so $\tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$, and therefore $x \in\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta}=\omega^{\prime}$.
Conversely, suppose $x \in \omega^{\prime}$. Then $x$ belongs to a triangle $\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)$. If $\tau \notin \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)$ then $\overline{B(\tau)} \cap \omega_{\Lambda} \neq \emptyset$, and so $\exists \tau^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)$ containing $x$. Thus $x \in \omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}$.

(a) $\left(\operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}(\omega)\left(\omega, \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)^{\Delta}\right.$
(c) The graph induced by the edge set

$$
\begin{gathered}
\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega) \\
=\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$



(b) $\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}, \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)\right)^{\Delta}$

(d) $\left(\omega, \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)^{\Delta, \Lambda}$.

Figure 4.1: The graph (c) is obtained by taking either (a) or (b) and removing the edges belonging to triangles whose circumcircles intersect $\Lambda$ (see Corollary 4.1.2). Notice that there may be points in $\omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}$ for which all incident edges are in $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)$. These points will belong to the graph (d) but not in (c).

To prove that the edge sets are the same we use Corollary 4.1.2:

$$
\begin{aligned}
E^{\prime} & =\left(E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)\right) \cap\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)\right) \\
& =E \cap\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)\right) \cap\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)\right) \\
& =E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega) \\
& =E^{\Delta, \Lambda} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 4.1.4. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$,

$$
\left(G^{\Delta, \Lambda}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}=G^{\Delta, \Lambda}=\left(G_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta, \Lambda} .
$$

Proof. The first equality is clear. For the second equality the proof of Lemma 4.1.3 gives us $\omega^{\Delta, \Lambda}=\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta}$, which is clearly equal to $\left(\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Delta}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}$ as required. Showing that the edge sets are the same is another application of Corollary 4.1.2:

$$
\begin{aligned}
E^{\Delta, \Lambda} & =E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega) \\
& =E_{\Lambda^{c}} \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega) \\
& =E_{\Lambda^{c}} \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 4.1.5. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$,

$$
\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}=G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}
$$

Proof. The vertex sets are clearly the same since $\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)_{\Delta^{c}}=\omega_{\Delta^{c}}$.
To show the equivalence of the edge sets, we apply Corollary 4.1.2:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)\right) \cap\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)\right) \cap\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega)\right) \\
= & E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \\
= & E^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.2 Definitions

### 4.2.1 The reference measure

To define the reference measures we begin with a function $p$ which assigns to each possible edge $e \in \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 2}$ an edge weight $p(e) \in[0,1]$. These will represent the probabilities that each edge of $\mathrm{Del}_{2}$ is open with respect to the reference measure. For $\omega \in \Omega$, let $\left\{\xi_{e} \mid e \in \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right\}$ be a set of independent Bernoulli random variables where $\xi_{e}=1$ with probability $p(e)$. Let $\mu_{\omega}$ denote the law of the random set $\left\{e \in \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \mid \xi_{e}=1\right\}$. This measure is called the edge drawing mechanism. For any subset $A \subset \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)$, the law of the random set $\left\{e \in A \mid \xi_{e}=1\right\}$ is called the edge drawing mechanism on $A$.

For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, \omega \in \Omega$ and $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega_{\Delta}$ let $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}$ denote the edge drawing mechanism on $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$, and let $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{\Lambda}$ denote the edge drawing mechanism on $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right)$. Note that $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}=\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega_{\Delta} c}$ and $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{\Lambda}=\mu_{\Delta, \omega_{\Delta \backslash \Lambda}^{\prime}, \omega_{\Delta c}}^{\Lambda}$ by Corollary 4.1.2, and furthermore if $\omega^{\prime \prime} \in \Omega_{\Delta}$ with $\left(\omega^{\prime \prime}\right)_{\Delta \backslash \Lambda}=\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)_{\Delta \backslash \Lambda}$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}=\mu_{\Delta, \omega_{A}^{\prime}, \omega^{\prime \prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta c}^{c}} \otimes \mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime \prime}, \omega}^{\Lambda} . \tag{4.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Intersections and unions are defined as follows for $G_{1}=\left(\omega_{1}, E_{1}\right)$, $G_{2}=\left(\omega_{2}, E_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{G}:$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& G_{1} \cup G_{2}:=\left(\omega_{1} \cup \omega_{2}, E_{1} \cup E_{2}\right), \\
& G_{1} \cap G_{2}:=\left(\omega_{1} \cap \omega_{2}, E_{1} \cap E_{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Definition 4.2.1. For $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ and $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, let $\nu_{\Delta, G}$ be the measure on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ given by

$$
\nu_{\Delta, G}(A):=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)
$$

for any $A \in \mathcal{A}$.
Notice that the graph $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$ is a subgraph of $\left(\omega_{\Delta} \cup \cup \omega^{\prime}, \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\left(\omega_{\Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)\right)\right.$. The kernels $\left(\nu_{\Delta}: \mathcal{G} \times \mathcal{A} \rightarrow[0,1]\right)_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ where $\nu_{\Delta}(G, A):=\nu_{\Delta, G}(A)$ satisfy the Gibbs consistency condition $\nu_{\Delta, G}(A)=\int \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}(A) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)$ for $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$.

Indeed by (4.2.1) and Corollary 4.1.2,

$$
\begin{align*}
\nu_{\Delta, G}(A)= & \int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\omega_{1} \cup \omega_{2} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}, E_{1} \cup E_{2} \cup E^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right) \\
& \mu_{\Lambda, \omega_{1}, \omega_{2} \cup \omega_{\Delta A^{c}}}\left(\mathrm{~d} E_{1}\right) \Pi_{\Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega_{1}\right) \mu_{\Delta, \omega_{2}, \omega}^{\Lambda}\left(\mathrm{d} E_{2}\right) \Pi_{\Delta \backslash \Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega_{2}\right) \\
= & \int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\omega_{1} \cup\left(\omega_{2}\right)_{\Delta \backslash \Lambda} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}, E_{1} \cup\left(E_{2}\right)^{\Delta, \Lambda} \cup E^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right) \\
= & \mu_{\Lambda, \omega_{1}, \omega_{2} \cup \omega_{\Delta \Delta}}\left(\mathrm{d} E_{1}\right) \Pi_{\Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega_{1}\right) \mu_{\Delta, \omega_{2}, \omega}\left(\mathrm{~d} E_{2}\right) \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega_{2}\right) \\
= & \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G_{1}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G_{2}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{1}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{2}\right) . \tag{4.2.2}
\end{align*}
$$

It this case it is also said that the kernels $\left(\nu_{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ form a specification. The measure

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nu(A):=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}(\omega, E) \mu_{\omega}(\mathrm{d} E) \Pi^{z}(\mathrm{~d} \omega) \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $A \in \mathcal{A}$ also satisfies equation (4.2.2) in place of $\nu_{\Delta, G}$ :

$$
\nu(A)=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G_{1}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G_{2}}\left(G_{1}\right) \nu\left(\mathrm{d} G_{2}\right) .
$$

### 4.2.2 The local number of connected components

Proposition 4.2.2. If $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ with $\left|\omega^{\Delta}\right|<\infty$ for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, then for $\Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ the limit

$$
N_{c c}^{\Lambda}(G):=\lim _{\Delta \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}}\left(N_{c c}\left(G^{\Delta}\right)-N_{c c}\left(G^{\Delta, \Lambda}\right)\right)
$$

exists, and is called the local number of connected components in $\Lambda$. In addition, $N_{c c}^{\Lambda}(G) \leq\left|\omega_{\Lambda}\right|$.

Proof. Let $\Delta_{n}$ be an increasing sequence of sets whose limit is $\mathbb{R}^{2}$. We will show that the sequence

$$
a_{n}:=N_{c c}\left(G^{\Delta_{n}}\right)-N_{c c}\left(G^{\Delta_{n}, \Lambda}\right)
$$

converges. Clearly $a_{n}$ is maximised when $E^{\Lambda}=\emptyset$, in which case $a_{n}=\left|\omega_{\Lambda}\right|$. We will now show that $a_{n}$ is increasing and therefore convergent.

Let $\omega^{\Delta_{n}} \backslash \omega^{\Delta_{n-1}}=\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n_{m}}\right\}$. If $n$ is large enough that $\Lambda \subset \Delta_{n-1}$, then for any $k \in\left\{1, . ., n_{m}\right\}, x_{k} \notin \omega^{\Lambda}$ and so

$$
\begin{aligned}
E_{n, k} & =\left\{\left\{x_{k}, y\right\} \in E^{\Delta_{n}}: y \in \omega^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup\left\{x_{1},, \ldots, x_{k-1}\right\}\right\} \\
& =\left\{\left\{x_{k}, y\right\} \in E^{\Delta_{n}, \Lambda}: y \in \omega^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup\left\{x_{1},, \ldots, x_{k-1}\right\}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Removing the points $\omega^{\Lambda}$ and the edges $E^{\Lambda}$ from the graph can only increase the number of connected components which are adjacent to $x_{k}$, so

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}\right\}, E^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup_{i=1}^{k} E_{n, i}\right)\right) \\
- & N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k-1}\right\}, E^{\Delta_{n-1}} \cup_{i=1}^{k-1} E_{n, i}\right)\right) \\
\geq & N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega^{\Delta_{n-1}, \Lambda} \cup\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}\right\}, E^{\Delta_{n-1}, \Lambda} \cup_{i=1}^{k} E_{n, i}\right)\right) \\
- & N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega^{\Delta_{n-1}, \Lambda} \cup\left\{x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k-1}\right\}, E^{\Delta_{n-1}, \Lambda} \cup_{i=1}^{k-1} E_{n, i}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By writing $a_{n}-a_{n-1}$ as a telescoping sum over $k$ we conclude that $a_{n}-a_{n-1} \geq 0$.

Proposition 4.2.3. If $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ and $\left|\omega^{\Delta}\right|<\infty$ for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, then for $\Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$

$$
N_{c c}^{\Lambda}(G) \geq 1-\left|\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Lambda}\right|
$$

Proof. $N_{c c}^{\Lambda}$ is minimised when $E^{\Lambda}=\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Lambda}(\omega)$, in which case each point in $\omega^{\Lambda}$ belongs to the same connected component. Thus adding the points and edges of $G^{\Lambda}$ to the graph $G^{\Delta, \Lambda}$ can connect at most $\left|\left(\omega^{\Lambda}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}\right|$ components. By Lemma 4.1.3, $\left|\left(\omega^{\Lambda}\right)_{\Lambda^{c}}\right|=\left|\left(\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\right)^{\Lambda}\right|$.

For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, the function $X_{\Delta, \Lambda}(G):=N_{c c}^{\Delta}(G)-N_{c c}^{\Lambda}(G)$ depends only on $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}$, i.e

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{\Delta, \Lambda}(G)=X_{\Delta, \Lambda}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right) . \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

To see this we apply Lemmas 4.1.5 and 4.1.3:

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_{\Delta, \Lambda}(G) & =\lim _{\nabla \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}}\left(N_{c c}\left(G^{\nabla, \Lambda}\right)-N_{c c}\left(G^{\nabla, \Delta}\right)\right) \\
& =\lim _{\nabla \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}}\left(N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\nabla, \Lambda}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)^{\nabla, \Delta}\right)\right) \\
& =\lim _{\nabla \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}}\left(N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\nabla, \Lambda}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)^{\nabla, \Delta}\right)\right) \\
& =\lim _{\nabla \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}}\left(N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\nabla, \Lambda}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)^{\nabla, \Delta}\right)\right) \\
& =X_{\Delta, \Lambda}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

This property will be useful when showing that the finite volume distributions form a specification (Proposition 4.2.6).

### 4.2.3 Delaunay random cluster measures

Let $\psi^{\prime}$ be a hyperedge potential on $\mathrm{Del}_{3}$ which can be written $\psi^{\prime}(\tau, \omega)=\psi(\tau)$ for some measurable function $\psi: \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 3} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$. Recall from (2.2.4) that the Hamiltonian in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ with boundary condition $\omega \in \Omega$ satisfies

$$
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)=\sum_{\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta} \subset \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)} \psi(\tau) .
$$

For $q \geq 1$ and $G, G^{\prime} \in \mathcal{G}$ such that $\left(G^{\prime}\right)^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}=G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$, define

$$
Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right):=q^{N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G^{\prime}\right)} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right)} .
$$

This function (up to multiplication by a constant) is the density of the finite volume distribution in $\Delta$ with boundary condition $G$ with respect to $\nu_{\Delta, G}$.

We say that $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ is admissible for $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $\psi$ if the partition function

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G) & :=\int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
& =\int q^{N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G^{\left.\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)\right.}
\end{aligned}
$$

is finite and non-zero. By Lemma 4.1.5, $\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)=\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$. The set of
admissible boundary conditions is denoted $\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$.
Definition 4.2.4. Let $G \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$. The (finite volume) Delaunay continuum random cluster distribution in $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ for $\psi, z>0, q \geq 1$, boundary condition $\omega$ and edge weights $p(e)_{\mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 2}}$ is the probability measure on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ defined by

$$
C_{\Delta, G}(A):=\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)^{-1} \int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G^{\prime}\right) Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)
$$

Remark 4.2.5. Let $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$ where $\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega) \subset E$. This is called a wired boundary condition. If $\Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ is large enough and $\left(G^{\prime}\right)^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}=$ $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
N_{c c}^{\Lambda}\left(G^{\prime}\right) & =N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\prime}\right)^{\Lambda}\right)-N_{c c}\left(\left(G^{\prime}\right)^{\Lambda, \Delta}\right) \\
& =N_{c c}\left(G^{\prime}\right)-N_{c c}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore

$$
C_{\Delta, G}(A):=\frac{q^{N_{c c}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)}}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \int q^{N_{c c}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right),
$$

which is the analogue to the Delaunay random cluster distribution from Definition 2.3.1 in the case where $q$ is a natural number and edges rather than triangles are declared open or closed.

Similar to Delaunay continuum Potts measures, Delaunay random cluster measures are defined by prescribing conditional probabilities according to the DLR equations. To do this we first need to check that the kernels $\left(C_{\Delta}: \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta} \times \mathcal{A} \rightarrow[0,1]\right)_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ defined by $C_{\Delta}(G, A):=C_{\Delta, G}(A)$ form a specification.

Proposition 4.2.6. For $\Lambda \subset \Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $G \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\Delta}\left(G, \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Lambda}\right)=1 \quad \text { and } \quad C_{\Delta}(G, f)=\int C_{\Lambda}\left(G^{\prime}, f\right) C_{\Delta}\left(G, \mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all measurable functions $f: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow[0, \infty)$.
Proof. If $G, G_{1}, G_{2} \in \mathcal{G}$ with $G_{1}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}=G_{2}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}$ and $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}=G_{1}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}=G_{2}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$ then
using (4.2.4) we can deduce that

$$
\begin{align*}
N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G_{1}\right)+N_{c c}^{\Lambda}\left(G_{2}\right) & =N_{c c}^{\Lambda}\left(G_{1}\right)+X_{\Delta, \Lambda}\left(G_{1}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda}\right)+N_{c c}^{\Lambda}\left(G_{2}\right) \\
& =N_{c c}^{\Lambda}\left(G_{1}\right)+N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G_{2}\right), \tag{4.2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

and courtesy of Corollary 4.1.2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\left(\omega_{1}\right)_{\Delta}\right)+H_{\Lambda, \omega_{1}}\left(\left(\omega_{2}\right)_{\Lambda}\right)=H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\left(\omega_{2}\right)_{\Delta}\right)+H_{\Lambda, \omega_{1}}\left(\left(\omega_{1}\right)_{\Lambda}\right) . \tag{4.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (4.2.6) and (4.2.7) we obtain

$$
Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{1}\right) Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{2}\right)=Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{2}\right) Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{1}\right)
$$

(so the family of functions $\left(G \mapsto Q_{\Delta, G}(G)\right)_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ is a pre-modification). After integrating with respect to $G_{2}$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{1}\right) \int Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) & =Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{1}\right) \int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
\Longrightarrow Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{1}\right) Z_{\Lambda}\left(G_{1}\right) & =Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{1}\right) \int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \tag{4.2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

By the bounds in Propositions 4.2.2 and 4.2.3, $q^{N_{c c}^{\Delta}}$ and $q^{N_{c c}^{A}}$ are both finite and non-zero almost surely with respect to $\nu_{\Delta, G}$. Therefore $Q_{\Delta, G}, Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}<\infty$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{1}\right)=0 & \Longleftrightarrow H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\left(\omega_{1}\right)_{\Delta}\right)=\infty, \text { and } \\
Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{1}\right)=0 & \Longleftrightarrow H_{\Lambda, \omega_{1}}\left(\left(\omega_{1}\right)_{\Lambda}\right)=\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

for $\nu_{\Delta, G}$-almost all $G_{1}$. Furthermore, taking this into account along with the inclusion $\operatorname{Del}_{3, \Lambda}\left(\omega_{1}\right) \subset \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{1}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}: Q_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}\left(G^{\prime}\right), Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \in(0, \infty)\right)=1 . \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now combining (4.2.9) with the relationship (4.2.8) and the consistency con-
dition (4.2.2), we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda}(\cdot)=0\right) & =C_{\Delta, G}\left(\nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(Q_{\Delta, G}\right)=0\right) \\
& =\int_{\left[\nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(Q_{\Delta, G}\right)=0\right]} Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
& =\iint_{\left[\nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(Q_{\Delta, G}\right)=0\right]} Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime \prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime \prime}\right) \\
& =0,
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
C_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda}(\cdot)=\infty\right)=C_{\Delta, G}\left(\int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime}\right)=\infty\right)=0
$$

since

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \iint Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime \prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime \prime}\right)=\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)<\infty \\
& \Longrightarrow \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime}\right)=\infty\right)=0 \\
& \Longrightarrow C_{\Delta, G}\left(\int Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda,(\cdot)}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime}\right)=\infty\right)=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

This finishes the proof of the statement $C_{\Delta}\left(G, \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Lambda}\right)=1$.
For the second statement, we start by multiplying both sides of (4.2.8) by $\frac{f\left(G_{1}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G) \mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}\left(G_{1}\right)}$, which results in the equation

$$
f\left(G_{1}\right) \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G_{1}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)}=f\left(G_{1}\right) \frac{Q_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(G_{1}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda}\left(G_{1}\right)} \int \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \nu_{\Lambda, G_{1}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)
$$

Furthermore, by integrating with respect to $G_{1}$, and using the consistency equation (4.2.2) we obtain:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int f\left(G^{\prime}\right) \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
= & \iiint f\left(G^{\prime \prime \prime}\right) \frac{Q_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}\left(G^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda}\left(G^{\prime}\right)} \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime \prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The former expression is equal to $C_{\Delta, G}(f)$ and the latter is equal to

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \iint C_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}(f) \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \nu_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} G^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
= & \int C_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}(f) \frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
= & \int C_{\Lambda, G^{\prime}}(f) C_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

as required.
The Gibbs measures specified by the above set of kernels are called Delaunay random cluster measures:

Definition 4.2.7. A probability measure $P$ on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ is called a Delaunay random cluster measure ( $D R C M$ ) for parameters $z>0, q \geq 1$, the hyperedge potential $\psi$ and edge weights $(p(e))_{e \in \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 2}}$ if $P\left(\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}\right)=1$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
P(f) & =\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}} C_{\Delta, G}(f) P(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}} \mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)^{-1} \int f\left(G^{\prime}\right) Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) P(\mathrm{~d} G)
\end{aligned}
$$

for every $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and every bounded measurable function $f: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \cup\{\infty\}$.
The set of DRCMs which are invariant under the translation group $\Theta=\left(\theta_{x}\right)_{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ is denoted $\mathscr{G}_{\Theta}$, and more generally the sets of probability measures and translation-invariant probability measures on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ are denoted $\mathscr{P}$ and $\mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ respectively. Note that these notations had different meanings in the previous chapters.

### 4.3 Existence result

Theorem 4.3.1. Let $z>0, q \geq 1$, and suppose that the edge weights are uniformly bounded away from 0 and 1 , i.e there exists $p_{-}, p_{+} \in(0,1)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{-} \leq p(e) \leq p_{+} \text {for all } e \in \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 2} \tag{4.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, suppose that the hyperedge potential $\psi$ satisfies ( $R$ ), (S) and (U) in addition to the hardcore conditions
(HCC) $\exists R_{0}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta(\tau) \geq R_{0} \Longrightarrow \psi(\tau)=\infty, \text { and } \tag{4.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(HCL) $\exists \ell_{0}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exists x, y \in \tau, x \neq y \text { with }|x-y| \leq \ell_{0} \Longrightarrow \psi(\tau)=\infty . \tag{4.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then there exists a translation-invariant Delaunay random cluster measure $P \in \mathscr{G}_{\Theta}$.

Remark 4.3.2. Note that the potential $\psi$ considered in Chapter 3 satisfies both (HCC) and (HCL) with $R_{0}=r$ and $\ell_{0}=2 r \sin \left(\alpha_{0}\right)$. If $p(e):=1-e^{-\phi(e)}$ for some function $\phi: \mathcal{E}_{\mathbb{R}^{2}, 2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ then we recover a model similar to the finite volume Delaunay random cluster distribution from definition 2.3.1 except for that fact that edges rather than triangles are declared to be open or closed.

### 4.4 Proof

The rest of this chapter is devoted to the proof of this theorem. In section 4.4.1 we introduce two relevant topologies and notion of specific entropy along with a useful convergence result. In section 4.4.2 we construct a sequence $\tilde{P}_{n}$ of probability measures from the finite volume distributions and use this result to find a subsequence which converges to some measure $\tilde{P}$. We then set about proving that $P:=\tilde{P}\left(\cdot \mid\{\emptyset\}^{c}\right) \in \mathscr{G}_{\Theta}$. To this end, in section 4.4.3 we define, for each $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, another sequence of measures $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ which converges to $\tilde{P}$. These sequences are more useful than $\tilde{P}_{n}$ because the measures $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ satisfy the DLR equation for $\Delta$. In section 4.4 .4 we use these new sequences to prove that $\tilde{P}$ has a unique infinite connected component almost surely, a fact which is utilised in section 4.4.5 to prove that $P$ satisfies the DLR equations.

### 4.4.1 Local convergence and the specific entropy

In this section we introduce the topology of local convergence and develop a useful tool for determining whether a sequence of probability measures $\left(P_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ in $\mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ has an accumulation point with respect to this topology. When proving the existence of Gibbsian point processes with geometry dependent interactions [DDG12] or infinite volume random cluster measures (defined as Gibbsian modifications of the Poisson Boolean model) [DH15], the relevant tool ([Geo94, Lemma 3.4]) is derived from the sequential compactness of the level sets of the specific entropy [GZ93, Proposition 2.6]. We require something slightly different here. If the specific entropy is defined in the analogous way (using the sub- $\sigma$-algebras of local events), it becomes difficult to compute in the cases that we are interested in. We therefore introduce a second topology, the topology of strict local convergence, and define the specific entropy using the sub- $\sigma$-algebras of strictly local events. The associated notions of local and strict local equicontinuity are equivalent for the nets that we are interested in (Lemma 4.4.7), so we can still take advantage of analogues of standard results regarding convergence in the topology of local convergence (Lemmas 4.4.9 and 4.4.10). This section culminates in a proof of the Proposition 4.4.6, which is used in the next section.

## Definitions

For $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, let us define the following subset of $\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}$ :

$$
\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}:=\left\{(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}: \forall e \in E \exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \text { such that } e \subset \tau \text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Delta\right\}
$$

and the projection $\rho_{\Delta}: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}$ given by $\rho_{\Delta}(\omega, E):=\left(\omega_{\Delta}, E \cap \rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega)\right)$ where

$$
\rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega):=\left\{e \in \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega): \exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \text { such that } e \subset \tau \text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Delta\right\} .
$$

$\rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega)$ represents the subset of $\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)$ which is unaffected by changes to the configuration $\omega$ which occur outside $\Delta$. More precisely,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho^{\mathcal{E}}\left(\omega_{\Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)=\rho^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega) \text { for all } \omega^{\prime} \subset \Delta^{c} . \tag{4.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 4.4.1. . Events in $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime}:=\left.\rho_{\Delta}^{-1} \mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}}$ and $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ are called strictly local and local respectively.

- A function $f: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is strictly local (resp. local) is if it is measurable with respect to the sigma algebra $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}\right)$ for some $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. The sets of strictly local and local functions are denoted $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ and $\mathcal{L}$ respectively.
- The topology of strict local (resp. local) convergence, or $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$-topology (resp. $\mathcal{L}$-topology), on $\mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ is defined to be the weak* topology induced by the set of bounded strictly local (resp. local) functions.

Clearly $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime} \subset \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ and so the $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$-topology is coarser than the $\mathcal{L}$-topology.
If $P$ and $Q$ are probability measures on the same probability space, the relative entropy (also known as the Kullback-Leibler divergence) of $P$ relative to $Q$ is defined to be

$$
I(P \mid Q):= \begin{cases}\int f \log f \mathrm{~d} Q & \text { if } P \ll Q \text { with density } f \\ \infty & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

When the underlying space is a Polish space equipped with its Borel $\sigma$-algebra, an alternative characterisation (e.g [DZ98, Lemma 6.2.13]) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
I(P \mid Q)=\sup _{g \in \mathcal{B}} P(g)-\log Q(\exp (g)), \tag{4.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathcal{B}$ is the set of bounded measurable functions.
Let $M$ be a fixed invertible $2 \times 2$ matrix with entries in $\mathbb{R}$, and let $\Lambda_{n}=\bigcup_{i, j=-n}^{n} C(i, j)$, where $C(i, j)$ is given by (2.1.9). We shall see in

Definition 4.4.2. The specific entropy or mean entropy of a measure $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ (relative to $\nu$ defined in (4.2.3)) is defined to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
I^{z}(P):=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I\left(P_{\Lambda_{n}} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right), \tag{4.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{\Lambda_{n}}:=P \circ \rho_{\Lambda_{n}}^{-1}$ and $\nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}:=\nu \circ \rho_{\Lambda_{n}}^{-1}$ (the intensity parameter $z$ is made explicit in the notation here for clarity).

The existence of $I^{z}(P)$ and the fact that it is independent on the matrix $M$ can be inferred from Proposition 4.4.3. For $\left.A \in \mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}}$, (4.4.1) and the
independence properties of $\Pi^{z}$ and $\mu_{\omega}$ give rise to the formula

$$
\nu_{\Delta}^{z}(A)=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}(\omega, E) \mu_{\Delta, \omega}(\mathrm{d} E) \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}(\mathrm{~d} \omega),
$$

where $\mu_{\Delta, \omega}$ denotes the tile drawing mechanism on $\rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega)$. Furthermore, when $\Delta, \Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ are disjoint and $\left.A \in \mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}$,

$$
\nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}(A)=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}(\mathrm{~d} G),
$$

where $\mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega}$ denotes the tile drawing mechanism on $\rho_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega) \backslash\left(\rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega) \cup \rho_{\Lambda}^{\mathcal{E}}(\omega)\right)$.

## Existence of the specific entropy

The existence of the specific entropy is a consequence of the following proposition.

Proposition 4.4.3. For all $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$,

$$
I^{z}(P)=\sup _{\Delta \in \mathscr{C}}|\Delta|^{-1} I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right),
$$

where $\mathscr{C}$ denotes the set of open cubes in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$.
The first step in proving Proposition 4.4.3 is to prove that the specific entropy is sub-additive in the following sense. The proof mimics that of [Geo11, Proposition 15.10].

Lemma 4.4.4. For each $P \in \mathscr{P}$ and all disjoint $\Delta, \Lambda \in \mathscr{C}$,

$$
I\left(P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda} \mid \nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}\right) \geq I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right)+I\left(P_{\Lambda} \mid \nu_{\Lambda}^{z}\right) .
$$

Proof. We can assume that $I\left(P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda} \mid \nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}\right)<\infty$, in which case the density $f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}:=\frac{\mathrm{d} P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}}{\mathrm{d} \nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}}$ exists. Let us also define the functions

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{\Delta}(G) & :=\nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}\left(f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left|\rho_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}=G\right) \\
& =\int f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(G \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{\Lambda}(G) & :=\nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}\left(f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left|\rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}=G\right) \\
& =\int f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(G \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Lambda} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\left.\rho_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}$ denotes the restriction $\rho_{\Delta}$ to $\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}$. It is then true that $f_{\Delta}=\frac{\mathrm{d} P_{\Delta}}{\mathrm{d} \nu \tilde{\Sigma}}$ and $f_{\Lambda}=\frac{\mathrm{d} P_{\Lambda}}{\mathrm{d} \nu_{\Lambda}^{\Sigma^{\sim}}}$. We consider the measure $\lambda$ on $\left.\mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}$ defined by

$$
\lambda(A):=\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\left.\rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}(G) \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Lambda} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(\mathrm{d} G)
$$

Now $\lambda\left(\left.f_{\Lambda} \circ \rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}>0\right)=P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\left.f_{\Lambda} \circ \rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}>0\right)=1$, so the quotient $f_{\Delta U \Lambda \mid \Lambda}:=\frac{f_{\Delta U \Lambda}}{\left.f_{\Lambda} \rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta U \Lambda}^{\prime}}}$ is well-defined $\lambda$-almost surely. Moreover, $\frac{\mathrm{d} P_{\Delta U \Lambda}}{\mathrm{~d} \lambda}=f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda \mid \Lambda}$ since for $\left.A \in \mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta U \Lambda}^{\prime}} ^{\Delta U \Lambda}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lambda\left(f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda \mid \Lambda} \mathbb{1}_{A}\right) \\
& =\int \frac{\mathbb{1}_{A} f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\left.\rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}(G) \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Lambda} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)}{\int f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\left.\rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}(G) \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Lambda} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)} P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(\mathrm{d} G) \\
& =\int P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(A \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}^{\prime}\right)(G) P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(\mathrm{d} G) \\
& =P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

by the tower property. Similarly, for $\left.A \in \mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lambda \circ\left(\rho_{\Delta}{\mid \mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A} f_{\Delta}\right) \\
& =\lambda\left(\left(\mathbb{1}_{A} f_{\Delta}\right) \circ \rho_{\Delta}{\mid \mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}\right) \\
& =\int \mathbb{1}_{A} f_{\Delta}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega_{\Lambda} \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(\mathrm{d} G) \\
& =\int \mathbb{1}_{A} f_{\Delta}(G) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\int \mathbb{1}_{A}(G) f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(G \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \Lambda, \omega \Delta \cup \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Delta}^{z}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\left.\rho_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}(G)\right) f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}(G) \nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A} \circ \rho_{\Delta} \mid \mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}\right) \\
& =P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda} \circ\left(\left.\rho_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}(A),
\end{aligned}
$$

and so $\frac{\mathrm{d} P_{\Delta}}{\left.\mathrm{d} \lambda\left(\left.\rho_{\Delta}\right|_{G^{\prime}}\right)_{\Lambda}\right)^{-1}}=f_{\Delta}$. Therefore we can write, using the fact that the function $\Delta \mapsto \bar{I}\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right)$ is increasing (see [Geo11, Proposition 15.5(c)]),

$$
\begin{aligned}
I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right) & =P_{\Delta}\left(\log f_{\Delta}\right) \\
& =I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \lambda \circ\left(\rho_{\Delta}{\mid \mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\right) \\
& \leq I\left(P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda} \mid \lambda\right) \\
& =P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\log f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda \mid \Lambda}\right) \\
& =P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}\left(\log f_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}-\left.\log f_{\Lambda} \circ \rho_{\Lambda}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{\prime}}\right) \\
& =I\left(P_{\Delta \cup \Lambda} \mid \nu_{\Delta \cup \Lambda}^{z}\right)-I\left(P_{\Lambda} \mid \nu_{\Lambda}^{z}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof of Proposition 4.4.3. Let us use the shorthand $I_{\Delta}$ in place of $I^{z}\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right)$. The following properties are satisfied:
(i) $I_{\Delta+x}=I_{\Delta}$ for all $\Delta \in \mathscr{C}$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}$,
(ii) $I_{\Delta}+I_{\Lambda} \leq I_{\Lambda \cup \Delta}$ whenever $\Delta, \Lambda \in \mathscr{C}$ and $\Delta \cap \Lambda=\emptyset$, and
(iii) $I_{\Lambda} \leq I_{\Delta}$ whenever $\Lambda \subset \Delta$.
(i) follows from the translation invariance of $P$ and $\nu$, (ii) follows from the previous lemma, and (iii) is [Geo11, Proposition 5.5(c)]. We can then follow
the argument of [Geo11, Lemma 15.11]. Choose any real $\epsilon>0$ and a cube $\Delta \in \mathscr{C}$ satisfying

$$
|\Delta|^{-1} I_{\Delta}>\sup _{\Delta \in \mathscr{C}}|\Delta|^{-1} I_{\Delta}-\epsilon
$$

If $N_{n}$ denotes the largest number of disjoint translates of $\Delta$ which can fit inside $\Lambda_{n}$, then $\frac{\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|}{N_{n}\left|\Delta_{n}\right|} \rightarrow 1$, so our assumptions allow us to obtain the estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{\Lambda_{n}} \geq N_{n} I_{\Delta}, \tag{4.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\limsup _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I_{\Lambda_{n}} \geq|\Delta|^{-1} I_{\Delta}>\sup _{\Delta \in \mathscr{C}}|\Delta|^{-1} I_{\Delta}-\epsilon .
$$

Since $\epsilon$ is arbitrary, we obtain the desired result.

## Convergence results

Since $\left(\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}^{\prime}, \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right)$ is a standard Borel space, (4.4.2) and Lemma 4.4 .3 show that $I^{z}$ is lower semi-continuous, and hence the level sets

$$
\begin{equation*}
L^{z}(c):=\left\{P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}: I^{z}(P) \leq c\right\} \tag{4.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $z>0$ and $c \in \mathbb{R}$ are closed. This section is devoted to proving the following proposition, which will be accomplished through a series of lemmas. For $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$, the point intensity of $P$ is $i(P):=\int\left|\omega_{[0,1]^{2}}\right| P(\mathrm{~d}(\omega, E))$. For any $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, i(P)=|\Delta|^{-1} \int\left|\omega_{\Delta}\right| P(\mathrm{~d}(\omega, E))$.

Proposition 4.4.5. Let $z>0$ and $c_{1}, c_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$. If $\left(P_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is a sequence in $\mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ such that $I^{z}\left(P_{n}\right) \leq c_{1} i\left(P_{n}\right)+c_{2}$, and there exists $k>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}(G)=\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta} \circ \rho_{\Delta \oplus k}(G) \text { for } P_{n} \text {-almost all } G \tag{4.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $P_{n}$ has a subsequence $\left(P_{n_{i}}\right)$ which converges in the $\mathcal{L}$ topology and whose limit $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ satisfies $I^{z}(P) \leq c_{1} i(P)+c_{2}$.

The following notions of equicontinuity are useful for establishing convergence.

Definition 4.4.6. A net $\left(P_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ in $\mathscr{P}$ is locally equicontinuous if for each $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and each sequence $\left(A_{n}\right)_{n \geq 1} \subset \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ with $A_{n} \searrow \emptyset$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \limsup _{i \in I} P_{i}\left(A_{n}\right)=0 \tag{4.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and strictly locally equicontinuous if (4.4.7) holds for each $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and each sequence $\left(A_{n}\right)_{n \geq 1} \subset \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime}$ with $A_{n} \searrow \emptyset$.

The two notions of equicontinuity are equivalent when (4.4.6) is satisfied. This property holds for the sequences we consider in the next chapter with $k=2 R_{0}$, due to (HCC).

Lemma 4.4.7. Let $\left(P_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ be a net in $\mathscr{P}$ such that for all $i \in I, \Delta \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$,

$$
\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}(G)=\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta} \circ \rho_{\Delta \oplus k}(G) \text { for } P_{i} \text {-almost all } G \text {. }
$$

Then $\left(P_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ is locally equicontinuous if and only if $\left(P_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ is strictly locally equicontinuous.

Proof. Since $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime} \subset \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ for all $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, local continuity always implies strict local equicontinuity. For the converse, let $\left(A_{n}\right)_{n \geq 1}$ be a sequence in $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ such that $A_{n} \searrow \emptyset$. Then $A_{n}=\left(\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}\right)^{-1}\left(B_{n} \cap \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}\right)$ for some $B_{n} \in \mathcal{A}$ and $\rho_{\Delta \oplus k}^{-1} \circ$ $\left(\left.\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \oplus k}^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(B_{n} \cap \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}\right) \searrow \emptyset$. Then by the assumptions we have

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \limsup _{i \in I} P_{i}\left(A_{n}\right)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \limsup _{i \in I} P_{i}\left(\rho_{\Delta \oplus k}^{-1} \circ\left(\left.\operatorname{pr}_{\Delta}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta \oplus k}^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(B_{n} \cap \mathcal{G}_{\Delta}\right)\right)=0 .
$$

To prove the following lemma we follow the same method as [Geo11][Proposition 15.14].

Lemma 4.4.8. Let $z>0$ and $c \in \mathbb{R}$. Every net in $L^{z}(c)$ is strictly locally equicontinuous.

Proof. We assume without loss of generality that $c \geq 0$, since $I^{z}(P) \geq 0$ for all $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$. Let $\Delta \in \mathscr{C}$ and $\left(\rho_{\Delta}^{-1} A_{m}\right)_{m \geq 1}$ be a sequence in $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}^{\prime}$ with $\rho_{\Delta}^{-1} A_{m} \searrow \emptyset$. For every $P \in L^{z}(c)$ we have $I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right) \leq c|\Delta|$ by Proposition 4.4.3. In particular each $P_{\Delta}$ is absolutely continuous with respect to $\nu_{\Delta}^{z}$ with
density $f_{\Delta}^{P}$. For a given $\epsilon>0$, let $\delta>0$ satisfy $\epsilon \log \epsilon / \delta \geq 1+c|\Delta|$. If $m$ is large enough that $\nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(A_{m}\right)=\nu^{z}\left(\rho_{\Delta}^{-1} A_{m}\right) \leq \delta$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left(\rho_{\Delta}^{-1} A_{m}\right) & =\nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A_{m} \cup\left\{f_{\Delta}^{P} \leq \epsilon / \delta\right\}} f_{\Delta}^{P}\right)+\nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A_{m} \cup\left\{f_{\Delta}^{P}>\epsilon / \delta\right\}} f_{\Delta}^{P}\right) \\
& \leq \epsilon+(\log \epsilon / \delta)^{-1} \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A_{m} \cup\left\{f_{\Delta}^{P}>\epsilon / \delta\right\}} f_{\Delta}^{P} \log f_{\Delta}^{P}\right) \\
& \leq \epsilon+(\log \epsilon / \delta)^{-1}\left(I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right)-\nu_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathbb{1}_{A_{m}^{c} \cap\left\{f_{\Delta}^{P \leq \epsilon / \delta\}}\right.} f_{\Delta}^{P} \log f_{\Delta}^{P}\right)\right) \\
& \leq \epsilon+(\log \epsilon / \delta)^{-1}\left(I\left(P_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right)+1\right) \\
& \leq 2 \epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $P \in L^{z}(c)$. The second to last line follows from the inequality $x \log x \geq-1$.

The analogue of the next lemma for random fields on $\mathbb{Z}^{d}$ is [Geo11, Proposition 4.9]. We use a similar argument here.

Lemma 4.4.9. Every locally equicontinuous net in $\mathscr{P}$ has at least one cluster point in $\mathscr{P}$ with respect to the $\mathcal{L}$-topology (and therefore with respect to the $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$-topology also).

Proof. Let $\left(P_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ be a net in $\mathscr{P}$. Its restriction $\left(P_{i}^{0}\right)_{i \in I}$ to $\mathcal{A}^{0}:=\cup_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}} \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ is a net in the compact Hausdorff space $[0,1]^{\mathcal{A}^{0}}$, and so there is a subnet $\left(P_{i_{j}}\right)_{j \in I^{\prime}}$ with the property that $\left(P_{i_{j}}^{0}\right)_{j \in I^{\prime}}$ converges setwise to some $P^{0} \in[0,1]^{\mathcal{A}^{0}}$. $P^{0}$ is additive, and is in fact $\sigma$-additive on each $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$. To see this note that if $\left(A_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ is a sequence of events in $\mathcal{A}_{\Delta}$ such that $A_{n} \searrow \emptyset$ then

$$
\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} P^{0}\left(A_{m}\right)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{j \in I^{\prime}} P_{i_{j}}\left(A_{m}\right) \leq \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \limsup _{i \in I} P_{i}\left(A_{m}\right)=0 .
$$

Since each $\left(\mathcal{G}_{\Delta},\left.\mathcal{A}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_{\Delta}}\right)$ is a standard Borel space and $\mathcal{A}=\sigma\left(\cup_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}} \mathcal{A}_{\Delta}\right)$, by Kolmogorov's extension theorem there exists a unique measure $P \in \mathscr{P}$ which extends $P^{0}$.

The proof of the following lemma is omitted but it can be proven in the same way as [Geo11][Theorem 4.15].

Lemma 4.4.10. If $P \in \mathscr{P}$ is a cluster point of a locally equicontinuous sequence $\left(P_{n}\right)_{n \geq 1}$ in $\mathscr{P}$ then there is a subsequence $\left(P_{n_{k}}\right)_{k \geq 1}$ which converges to $P$ in the $\mathcal{L}$-topology.

Proof of Proposition 4.4.5. Since $\frac{\mathrm{d} \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}}{\mathrm{~d} \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\lambda_{n}}}=z^{\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}\right|} e^{(1-z)\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|}$ it can be easily shown that for any $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$,

$$
I^{z}(P)=I^{1}(P)-i(P) \log (z)+z-1
$$

and therefore if $z^{\prime}=z e^{c_{1}}$ for $c_{1} \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I^{z}(P)-I^{z^{\prime}}(P)=i(P)\left(\log \left(z^{\prime}\right)-\log (z)\right)+z-z^{\prime} \\
& \Longrightarrow I^{z}(P)=I^{z^{\prime}}(P)+c_{1} i(P)+z-z^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

Consequently, for any $c_{1}, c_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\{P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}: I^{z}(P) \leq c_{1} i(P)+c_{2}\right\} & =\left\{P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}: I^{z^{\prime}}(P) \leq c_{2}-z+z^{\prime}\right\} . \\
& =L^{z^{\prime}}\left(c_{2}-z+z^{\prime}\right) . \tag{4.4.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Together with Lemmas 4.4.7 and 4.4.8, this implies that $P_{n}$ is a locally equicontinuous sequence in $L^{z^{\prime}}\left(c_{2}-z+z^{\prime}\right)$. By Lemmas 4.4.9 and 4.4.10 $P_{n}$ therefore has a subsequence which converges with respect to the $\mathcal{L}$-topology. Since the level sets are closed, the limit $P$ is in $L^{z^{\prime}}\left(c_{2}-z+z^{\prime}\right)$ as required.

### 4.4.2 Existence of an accumulation point

In this section we construct a sequence $\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ of measures from the finite volume Delaunay random cluster distbutions. We show that the assumptions of Proposition 4.4.5 are satisfied, ensuring that $\tilde{P}_{n}$ has a convergent subsequence. In subsequent sections we will show that the limit, after conditioning out the empty configuration, is a Delaunay random cluster measure.

From here on, we assume that the premises of Theorem 4.3.1 are satisfied. Suppose $M$ and $\Gamma$ are chosen so that (U1) - (U3) are satisfied. Let $\omega \in \bar{\Gamma}$ be a fixed pseudo-periodic configuration with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{i, j \in \mathbb{Z}} N_{C(i, j)}(\omega)<\infty \tag{4.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

(for instance $\omega$ could be periodic), and $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$ for some $E \in \mathcal{E}$. We first show that $G$ is admissible with respect to $\Lambda_{n}$ (i.e $G \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Lambda_{n}}$ ). By (U1),
$\omega \in \Omega_{c r}^{\Lambda_{n}}$, and so by (S)

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \geq-c_{S}\left|\omega^{\prime} \cup \partial_{\Lambda_{n}} \omega\right| \tag{4.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega_{\Lambda_{n}}$. This, in conjunction with Proposition 4.2.2, yields

$$
\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G) \leq e^{c_{S}\left|\partial_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\Gamma} \omega\right|} \int q^{\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|} e^{c_{S}\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|} \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\left(d \omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty
$$

Conversely, it can be shown that under assumptions (U1), (U2) and shiftinvariance of $\psi$ that if $\omega^{\prime} \in \Omega_{\Lambda_{n}}$ and $\omega \cup \omega^{\prime} \in \bar{\Gamma}$ then

$$
H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \leq c_{\Gamma}(2 n+1)+o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right),
$$

where the error term is uniform in $\omega^{\prime}$ (see [DDG12, equation (5.8)] and its proof). Together with Proposition 4.2.3 this gives the estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G) \geq q^{1-\mid\left(\omega_{\left.\left(\Lambda_{n}\right)^{c}\right)^{\Lambda^{\Lambda_{n}}} \mid} e^{-c_{\Gamma}(2 n+1)-o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right)} \Pi_{C}^{z}(\Gamma)^{(2 n+1)}>0, .\right.} \tag{4.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we recall that $\Pi_{C}^{z}(\Gamma)>0$ by (U3). Therefore $G \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$, so we can define the Gibbs distribution

$$
C_{n}:=C_{\Lambda_{n}, G} \circ \rho_{\Lambda_{n}}^{-1} .
$$

in $\Lambda_{n}$ with boundary condition $G$, projected to $\mathcal{G}_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}$. In order to construct a shift invariant Gibbs measure we spatially average this measure. Let $P_{n}$ denote the probability measure on $(\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{A})$ relative to which the configuration in each parallelogram $\Lambda_{n}+(2 n+1) M k, k \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ is independent with distribution $C_{n}$. The spatially averaged measure is

$$
\tilde{P}_{n}:=\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int_{\Lambda_{n}} P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1} \mathrm{~d} x .
$$

Let $x \in \Lambda_{n}$. There exist $k_{1}, k_{2}, k_{3}, k_{4} \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ and $\Lambda_{n}^{i} \subset \Lambda_{n}+(2 n+1) M k_{i}$ such that $\Lambda_{n}-x=\cup_{i=1}^{4} \Lambda_{n}^{i}$. Then $\Lambda_{n}=\cup_{i=1}^{4} \theta_{-(2 n+1) M k_{i}}^{-1}\left(\Lambda_{n}^{i}\right)$. Since $P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}$ is
invariant under the shifts $\theta_{(2 n+1) M k}$ for $k \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}\right| P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}(\mathrm{~d} G) & =\int\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}-x}\right| P_{n}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{4} \int\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}^{i}}\right| P_{n}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\int\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}\right| P_{n}(\mathrm{~d} G)=\int|\omega| C_{n}(\mathrm{~d} G)
\end{aligned}
$$

One can therefore show that $i\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right)$ finite using stability (S) and Proposition 4.2.2,

$$
\begin{aligned}
i\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) & =\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int|\omega| C_{n}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}\right| q^{N_{c c} \Lambda_{n}\left(G^{\prime}\right)} e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}\right)} C_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
& \leq\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} e^{c_{S}\left|\partial_{\Lambda_{n}} \omega\right|} \int\left|\omega^{\prime}\right| e^{\left(c_{S}+\log (q)\right)\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|} \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

For convenience, if $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ we let $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}}$ and $\mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{+}$denote the edge drawing mechanisms on the sets $\rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{L}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega^{\prime} \cup \omega_{\Delta^{c}}\right) \backslash \rho_{\Delta}^{\mathcal{E}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ respectively. Then for $A \in \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda_{n}}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C_{n}(A)= \mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)^{-1} \int \mathbb{1}_{A} \circ \rho_{\Lambda_{n}}\left(G^{\prime}\right) Q_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
&=\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)^{-1} \int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right) Q_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda_{n}} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime} \cup E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \\
& \mu_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \mu_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) \Pi_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \\
&= \mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)^{-1} \int \mathbb{1}_{A}\left(G^{\prime}\right) Q_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(G^{\left.\mathbb{R}^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda_{n}} \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)}\right. \\
& \quad \mu_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right) \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

so

$$
\frac{\mathrm{d} C_{n}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}}\left(G^{\prime}\right)=\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)^{-1} \int Q_{\Lambda_{n}, G}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Lambda_{n}} \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right)
$$

Lemma 4.4.11. $I^{z}\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) \leq\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right)$.

Proof. Suppose that for a fixed $x \in \Lambda_{n}, \Delta$ can be written as a finite union $\Delta=\cup_{i=1}^{m} \Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}$ where $\Lambda_{n}^{k}:=\Lambda_{n}+x+(2 n+1) M k$ for $k \in \mathbb{Z}^{2}$. Let

$$
A:=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G} & \begin{array}{l}
e \in E \Longrightarrow \forall \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \text { with } e \subset \tau \\
\exists i \in\{1, \ldots, m\} \text { such that } B(\tau) \subset \Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Then

$$
\frac{\mathrm{d}\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)_{\Delta}}{\mathrm{d} \nu_{\Delta}^{z}}(G)=\mathbb{1}_{A}(G) \prod_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\mathrm{~d} C_{n} \circ \theta_{-x-(2 n+1) M k_{i}}^{-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}}^{z}}\left(\rho_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}}(G)\right),
$$

and therefore, since $0 \log 0=0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I\left(\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right) \\
\leq & \int \prod_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\mathrm{~d} C_{n} \circ \theta_{-x-(2 n+1) M k_{i}}^{-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}}}\left(G_{i}\right) \\
& \log \left(\prod_{j=1}^{m} \frac{\mathrm{~d} C_{n} \circ \theta_{-x-(2 n+1) M k_{j}}^{-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{j}}}}\left(G_{j}\right)\right) \mathrm{d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{1}}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{1}\right) \ldots \mathrm{d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{m}}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{m}\right) \\
= & \sum_{j=1}^{m} \int \log \left(\frac{\mathrm{~d} C_{n} \circ \theta_{-x-(2 n+1) M k_{j}}^{-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{j}}}}\left(G_{j}\right)\right) \\
& \prod_{i=1}^{m} \frac{\mathrm{~d} C_{n} \circ \theta_{-x-(2 n+1) M k_{i}}^{-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{i}}}}\left(G_{i}\right) \mathrm{d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{1}}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{1}\right) \ldots \mathrm{d} \nu_{\Lambda_{n}^{k_{m}}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G_{m}\right) \\
= & m I\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Dividing by $|\Delta|$ we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\Delta|^{-1} I^{z}\left(\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)_{\Delta} \mid \nu_{\Delta}^{z}\right) \leq\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right) . \tag{4.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now for an arbitrary cube $\Delta \in \mathscr{C}$ and a fixed $n$, let $\Delta^{+}$denote the union of all blocks $\Lambda_{n}^{k}$ that meet $\Delta$. Let $\Delta_{m}$ be a sequence in $\mathscr{C}$ such that

$$
I^{z}\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty}\left|\Delta_{m}\right|^{-1} I^{z}\left(\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)_{\Delta_{m}} \mid \nu_{\Delta_{m}}^{z}\right) .
$$

Then by (4.4.12) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
I^{z}\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right) & \leq \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty}\left|\Delta_{m}\right|^{-1} I^{z}\left(\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right)_{\Delta_{m}^{+}} \mid \nu_{\Delta_{m}^{+}}^{z}\right) \\
& \leq \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\left|\Delta_{m}^{+}\right|}{\left|\Delta_{m}\right|\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|} I^{z}\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right) \\
& =\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I^{z}\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $I^{z}$ is lower semi-continuous and affine, [DS89, Lemma 5.4.24] implies that

$$
\begin{aligned}
I^{z}\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) & =\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int_{\Lambda_{n}} I^{z}\left(P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}\right) \mathrm{d} x \\
& \leq\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I^{z}\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

which finishes the proof.
Proposition 4.4.12. The sequence $\tilde{P}_{n}$ has a convergent subsequence, and its limit $\tilde{P} \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ is non-degenerate $\left(\tilde{P} \neq \delta_{\emptyset}\right)$.

Proof. We seek to apply Proposition 4.4.5 to obtain the convergent subsequence. Since $\psi$ satisfies (HCC), (4.4.6) is satisfied with $k=2 R_{0}$ and $\tilde{P}_{n}$ in place of $P_{n}$. To show the other assumption of Proposition 4.4.5 holds we will prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
I^{z}\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right)-\left(c_{S}+\log q\right) i\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) \leq|C|^{-1}\left(c_{\Gamma}-\log \Pi_{C}(\Gamma)\right)+o(1) . \tag{4.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying Lemma 4.4.11 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I^{z}\left(C_{n}\right) \leq\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} I\left(C_{n} \mid \nu_{\Lambda_{n}}^{z}\right) \\
&=\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int \log \left(\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)^{-1} Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup G^{\prime} \cup\left(\emptyset, E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \mu_{\Delta, \omega^{\prime}, \omega}^{+}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime \prime}\right)\right) \\
& C_{n}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and applying the upper bound from Proposition 4.2.2 yields

$$
\begin{align*}
I^{z}\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) & \leq-\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \log Z_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)+\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int \log \left(q^{\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|} e^{-H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)}\right) C_{n}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
& =-\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \log \mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G)+\log (q) i\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right)-\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) C_{n}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \tag{4.4.14}
\end{align*}
$$

By assumption (4.4.9), $\left|\partial_{\Lambda_{n}} \omega\right|=o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right)$, so we can deduce from (4.4.10) that

$$
-\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) C_{n}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \leq c_{S} i\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right)+o(1)
$$

By (HCC) and Lemma 4.1.4,

$$
H_{\Lambda_{n}, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty \Longrightarrow\left(\omega_{\left.\left(\Lambda_{n}\right)^{c}\right)^{\Lambda_{n}}}=\left(\left(\omega_{\left(\Lambda_{n}\right)^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)^{\Lambda_{n}}\right)_{\left(\Lambda_{n}\right)^{c}} \subset \omega_{\Lambda_{n} \oplus 2 R_{0} \backslash \Lambda_{n}},\right.
$$

and by (4.4.9), $\left|\omega_{\Lambda_{n} \oplus 2 R_{0} \backslash \Lambda_{n}}\right|=o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right)$, so similar to (4.4.11) we have the estimate

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G) & \geq q^{-o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right)} e^{-c_{\Gamma}(2 n+1)^{2}-o\left(\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|\right)} \Pi_{C}(\Gamma)^{(2 n+1)^{2}} \\
\Longrightarrow-\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \log \mathrm{Z}_{\Lambda_{n}}(G) & \leq c_{\Gamma}|C|^{-1}+o(1)-|C|^{-1} \log \Pi_{C}(\Gamma) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Combining these inequalities with (4.4.14) gives (4.4.13), as required. Finally, it is left to check that the limit $\tilde{P}$ is non-degenerate. Let $c_{1}:=c_{S}+\log (q), c_{2}:=|C|^{-1}\left(c_{\Gamma}-\log \left(\Pi_{C}(\Gamma)\right)\right)$. By (4.4.13) and (4.4.8) we have $I^{z e^{c_{1}}}\left(\tilde{P}_{n}\right) \leq c_{2}-z+z e^{c_{1}}+o(1)$. Since $I^{z e^{c_{1}}}$ is lower semi-continuous, we also have $I^{z e^{c_{1}}}(\tilde{P}) \leq c_{2}-z+z e^{c_{1}}$. By assumption (U3), $c_{2}<z$, and so

$$
I^{z e^{c_{1}}}(\tilde{P})<z e^{c_{1}}=I^{z e^{c_{1}}}\left(\delta_{\emptyset}\right),
$$

which implies $\tilde{P}_{n} \neq \delta_{\emptyset}$.
The remainder of this Chapter will be spent showing that the conditioned measure $P:=\tilde{P}\left(\cdot \mid\{\emptyset\}^{c}\right)$ is a Delaunay random cluster measure. For ease of notation, henceforth we identify $\tilde{P}_{n}$ with its subsequence that converges to $\tilde{P}$.

### 4.4.3 A second converging sequence

In this short section we construct, for each $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, a sequence $\left(C_{n}^{\Delta}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ of sub-probability measures which also has a subsequence converging locally to the limit $\tilde{P}$. We do this by showing that $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|C_{n}^{\Delta}(f)-\tilde{P}_{n}(f)\right|=0$ for each local function $f$. The measures $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ satisfy the DLR equation for $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$, making them useful for proving that the same is true for $P$. If $n$ is large enough that $\Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}$ then the $\Delta$-interior of $\Lambda_{n}$,

$$
\Lambda_{n}^{\circ}:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: \Delta+x \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\},
$$

is non-empty. We can then define the measure

$$
C_{n}^{\Delta}:=\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int_{\Lambda_{n}^{\circ}} C_{\Lambda_{n}, G} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1} \mathrm{~d} x=\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \int_{\Lambda_{n}^{\circ}} C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G} \mathrm{~d} x,
$$

where the equality is due to the fact that $Q$ is shift-invariant.
Proposition 4.4.13. If $n$ is large enough that $\Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}$, then $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ satisfies the DLR equation for $\Delta$, i.e for any local bounded function $f$,

$$
C_{n}^{\Delta}(f)=\int C_{\Delta, G}(f) C_{n}^{\Delta}(\mathrm{d} G)
$$

In addition,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|C_{n}^{\Delta}(f)-\tilde{P}_{n}(f)\right|=0, \tag{4.4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ has a subsequence which converges locally to $\tilde{P}$.
Proof. The DLR equations follow from the fact that the kernels $\left(C_{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}}$ form a specification (Proposition 4.2.6). To prove (4.4.15), let $f$ be an $\mathcal{A}_{\Lambda^{-}}$ measurable function with $|f(G)| \leq U$ for all $G \in \mathcal{G}$. Since $P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}$ satisfies (4.4.6) for $k=2 R_{0}$, if $\left(\Lambda \oplus 2 R_{0} \cup \Delta\right)+x \subset \Lambda_{n}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G}(f)=P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}(f) . \tag{4.4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, if $n$ is large enough that $\Lambda \oplus 2 R_{0}, \Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left|C_{n}^{\Delta}(f)-\tilde{P}_{n}(f)\right| \\
= & \left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1}\left|\int_{\Lambda_{n}^{\circ}} C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G}(f) \mathrm{d} x-\int_{\Lambda_{n}} P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}(f) \mathrm{d} x\right| \\
= & \left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1} \mid \int_{\left\{x: \Delta+x \subset \Lambda_{n}, \Lambda \oplus 2 R_{0}+x \not \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\}} C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G}(f) \mathrm{d} x \\
& -\int_{\left\{x:\left(\Lambda \oplus 2 R_{0} \cup \Delta\right)+x \not \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\}} P_{n} \circ \theta_{x}^{-1}(f) \mathrm{d} x \mid \\
\leq & 2 U\left|\Lambda_{n}\right|^{-1}\left|\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}:\left(\Lambda \oplus 2 R_{0} \cup \Delta\right)+x \not \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\}\right| \xrightarrow{n \rightarrow \infty} 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.4.4 Uniqueness of the infinite connected component

This section is devoted to showing that with respect to $\tilde{P}$ (and therefore $P$ ), there is at most one infinite connected component almost surely. This fact is subsequently used to bound the range of $N_{c c}^{\Delta}$, which will allow us in the next section to use the local convergence of $C_{n}^{\Delta}$ to $\tilde{P}$ to show that $\tilde{P}$ satisfies the DLR equation in $\Delta$. This section largely follows the approach taken in [DH15, section 4.2]. We start by proving some basic properties of $\tilde{P}$ and some preliminary lemmas.

Suppose $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, n \in \mathbb{R}^{+}$and $G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G}$. Define $\Delta_{n}:=\Delta \oplus n$ and let $f_{n}^{\Delta}: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_{\Delta_{n}}^{\prime}$ be the function defined by $f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)=\left(\omega_{n}, E_{n}\right)$, where

$$
\omega_{n}:=\left\{x \in \omega: \exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \text { with } x \in \tau \text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Delta_{n}\right\}
$$

and

$$
E_{n}:=\left\{e \in E: \exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \text { with } e \subset \tau \text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Delta_{n}\right\}
$$

See figure 4.2 for a diagram of $f_{n}^{\Delta}\left(\omega,\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)\right)$. The following properties are


Figure 4.2: A comparison of $f_{n}^{\Delta}\left(\omega,\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)\right)($ left $)$ with $\left(\omega,\left(\operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)\right)_{\Delta_{n}}$ (right) for a fixed configuration $\omega$.
satisfied by $f_{n}^{\Delta}$.

1. $f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)=f_{n}^{\Delta}\left(G_{\Delta_{n}}\right)\left(f_{n}^{\Delta}\right.$ is local),
2. $f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)^{\Delta}=f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)$,
3. for $n \leq m, f_{n}^{\Delta}(G) \subset f_{m}^{\Delta}(G)$, with $\cup_{n \in \mathbb{N}} f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)=G^{\Delta}$.

Lemma 4.4.14. For any $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}, \tilde{P}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)=G^{\Delta}\right)=1$.
Proof. Since $f_{n}^{\Delta}$ is local we can apply the local convergence of $C_{m}^{\Delta}$ to $\tilde{P}$ (Proposition 4.4.13):

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{P}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)=G^{\Delta}\right) & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \tilde{P}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)=f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)\right) \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} C_{m}^{\Delta}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)=f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The last expression is equal to 1 since (HCC) implies that

$$
C_{m}^{\Delta}\left(f_{n}^{\Delta}(G)=G^{\Delta}\right)=\frac{\left|\Lambda_{m}^{\circ}\right|}{\left|\Lambda_{m}\right|}
$$

for all $n \geq 2 R_{0}$.
Lemma 4.4.15. Let $A_{+}$and $A_{-}$denote events that $E^{\Delta}=\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega)$ and $E^{\Delta}=\emptyset$ respectively, where $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. If $G \in \mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}$ there exists $K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right) \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
C_{\Delta, G}\left(A_{+}\right) \geq q p_{-}^{-6}\left(\frac{p_{-}^{3}}{q}\right)^{K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)+\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}} \backslash \Delta\right|}
$$

and

$$
C_{\Delta, G}\left(A_{-}\right) \geq q\left(1-p_{+}\right)^{-6}\left(\frac{\left(1-p_{+}\right)^{3}}{q}\right)^{K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)+\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta}\right|} .
$$

Proof. Using the bounds from Propositions 4.2.2 and 4.2.3 along with (HCC) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right| \geq N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G^{\prime}\right) \geq 1-\left|\left(\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)^{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta^{c}}\right| \geq 1-\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta}^{\prime}\right| \tag{4.4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{Q_{\Delta, G}\left(G^{\prime}\right)}{\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)} \geq \frac{q^{1-\mid \omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}^{\prime} \backslash \Delta}} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega_{\Delta}^{\prime}\right)}}{\int q^{\left|\omega^{\prime}\right|} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)} . \tag{4.4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now since the Delaunay graph is a nearest neighbour graph and there is a lower bound $\ell_{0}$ on the edge lengths enforced by (HCL), the number of points in $\Delta$ is bounded above by some number $K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)$. It is a simple consequence of Euler's formula for planar graphs that the maximum number of edges in a planar graph with $V$ vertices is $3 V-6$, so using (4.3.1) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_{\Delta, G}\left(A_{+}\right) & \geq \frac{\int p_{-}^{3\left(K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)+\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}}\right| \Delta \mid\right)-6} q^{1-\mid \omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)}}{\int q^{K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)} e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right)} \\
& =p_{-}^{3\left(K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)+\mid \omega_{\left.\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta \mid\right)-6}\right.} q^{1-\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}}\right| \Delta \mid-K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The proof of the second inequality is carried out in the same way.
The proof that there is at most one infinite connected component is based on the following property called the local modification property. It states that all of the edges in $G^{\Delta}$ are all open or all closed with positive probability.

Proposition 4.4.16. (Local modification property.) Let $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. For any event $B$ satisfying $\tilde{P}(B)>0$ and $\mathbb{1}_{B}(G)=\mathbb{1}_{B}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$ for all $G$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min \left(\tilde{P}\left(A_{+} \cap B\right), \tilde{P}\left(A_{-} \cap B\right)\right)>0 \tag{4.4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We will prove that $\tilde{P}\left(A_{+} \cap B\right)>0$. The proof that $\tilde{P}\left(A_{-} \cap B\right)>0$ is the same except that $1-p_{+}$replaces $p_{-}$.
By Lemma 4.4.14, we have $\mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)\right)=\mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}\left(G^{\Delta}\right)=\mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}(G) \tilde{P}$-a.s, with the leftmost expression being a local function due to (4.4.17). By Levy's upwards theorem, we can write $\mathbb{1}_{B}$ as a limit of local functions (which only depend on $\left.G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$ :

$$
\mathbb{1}_{B}(G)=\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right)=\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right) \quad \tilde{P} \text {-a.s. }
$$

Therefore the local convergence of $C_{m}^{\Delta}$ to $\tilde{P}$ gives us the following:

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{P}\left(A_{+} \cap B\right) & =\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \int \mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)\right) \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right) \tilde{P}(\mathrm{~d} G) \\
& =\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \int \mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}(G)\right) \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right) C_{m}^{\Delta}(\mathrm{d} G) \\
& =\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \int \mathbb{1}_{A_{+}}(G) \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right) C_{m}^{\Delta}(\mathrm{d} G) \\
& =\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \int C_{\Delta, G}\left(A_{+}\right) \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right) C_{m}^{\Delta}(\mathrm{d} G) . \tag{4.4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Now applying the result of Lemma 4.4.15 and the local convergence of $C_{m}^{\Delta}$ to
$\tilde{P}$ again we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{P}\left(A_{+} \cap B\right) & =\lim _{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{R}^{2}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \int p_{-}^{3\left(K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)+\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}} \backslash \Delta\right|\right)-6} q^{1-\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}} \backslash \Delta\right|-K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)} \\
& =q p_{-}^{-6}\left(\frac{p_{-}^{3}}{q}\right)^{K\left(\Delta, \ell_{0}\right)} \int_{B}\left(\frac{p_{-}^{3}}{q}\right)^{\left|\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}}\right| \Delta \mid} \tilde{P}\left(B \mid \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda}\right)\left(G_{\Lambda}\right) C_{m}^{\Delta}(\mathrm{d} G)>0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now since $\tilde{P}$ is translation invariant, it can be written as a mixture

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{P}=\int \tilde{P}_{H} \tilde{P}(\mathrm{~d} H) \tag{4.4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{P}_{H}$ are ergodic probability measures [MR96, Proposition 7.2]. Like $\tilde{P}$, the measures $\tilde{P}_{H}$ also satisfy the local modification property. The event that the number of infinite connected components is exactly $k$ is translation invariant, so by ergodicity the number of infinite connected components is $\tilde{P}_{H^{-}}$ almost surely constant for all $H$. Notice that a consequence of Lemma 4.4.14 is that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{P}_{H}\left(f_{2 R_{0}}^{\Delta}=G^{\Delta}\right)=1 \tag{4.4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\tilde{P}$-almost all $H$.
Proposition 4.4.17. If $P$ is an ergodic measure satisfying the local modification property then for all integers $k>1$

$$
P\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}=k\right)=0,
$$

where $N_{c c}^{\infty}$ denoted the number of infinite connected components.
Proof. Since $P$ is ergodic and the event $N_{c c}^{\infty}=k$ is translation invariant it is enough to show that $P\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}=k\right)<1$. Suppose $P\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}=k\right)=1$ and let $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ be large enough that with positive probability all $k$ infinite connected components intersect $\omega_{\Delta}$. Any path from a point in $\omega_{\Delta^{c}}$ to a point in $\omega_{\Delta}$ must contain a point in $\left(\omega^{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$, so with positive probability all $k$ infinite connected components intersect $\left(\omega^{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$. This happens if and only if $\left(\omega^{\Delta}\right)_{\Delta^{c}}$ intersects all (possibly more than $k$ but still finite) infinite connected components of $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$,


Figure 4.3: A configuration $G$ with a trifurcation point at $x$. The vertices of $\left(\omega^{I_{n}+x}\right)_{\left(I_{n}+x\right)^{c}}$ and the edges of $E^{I_{n}+x}$ are coloured in red.
which only depends on $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$. By applying the local modification property we conclude that with positive probability this occurs simultaneously with $E^{\Delta}=\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}(\omega)$. But in this case all of the infinite connected components of $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$ are connected via edges in $E^{\Delta}$, so $\tilde{P}\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}(G)=1\right)>0$, which is a contradiction.

Proposition 4.4.18. (Uniqueness of the infinite connected component)

$$
\tilde{P}\left(N_{c c}^{\infty} \leq 1\right)=1 .
$$

Proof. By Proposition 4.4.17 and the ergodicity of $\tilde{P}_{H}$, it is enough to show that $\tilde{P}_{H}\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}=\infty\right)<1$ for $\tilde{P}$-almost all $H$. Suppose that $\tilde{P}_{H}\left(N_{c c}^{\infty}=\infty\right)=1$ and let $I_{n}:=[-n, n]^{2}$. A point $x \in\left(3 n+6 R_{0}\right) \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ is called a trifurcation point (pictured in figure 4.3b) if

- There are at least 3 infinite connected components of $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, I_{n}+x}$ intersecting $\left(\omega^{I_{n}+x}\right)_{\left(I_{n}+x\right)^{c}}$, and
- $E^{I_{n}+x}=\operatorname{Del}_{2, I_{n}+x}(\omega)$.

By the local modification property, one can choose $n$ large enough that 0 is a trifurcation point with positive probability. By the translation invariance of
$\tilde{P}_{H}$, the probability that any point $x \in\left(3 n+6 R_{0}\right) \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ is a trifurcation point is the same, so by the linearity of the expectation the expected number of trifurcation points inside the box $I_{m}$ is in $\mathcal{O}\left(m^{2}\right) \backslash o\left(m^{2}\right)$.

Now we apply [BR06, Lemma 3, p. 121] in a similar fashion to how it was applied in [BR06, Theorem 4, p.121]. Let $\mathcal{O}$ denote the union of all infinite connected components of $G$ which intersect $I_{m+n+2 R_{0}}$. Let $T_{m}$ denote the set of trifurcation points in $I_{m}$. If for every $x \in T_{m}$ the edges in $E^{I_{n}+x}$ are removed, $\mathcal{O}$ is split into several components. Let $L_{1}, \ldots, L_{t}$ denote the infinite ones and $F_{1}, \ldots, F_{u}$ denote the finite ones. Now we consider the graph $J$ obtained from $G$ by contracting $\omega^{I_{n}+x}$ to a single point $v_{x}$ for each $x \in T_{m}$ and contracting the components $L_{i}$ and $F_{i}$ to single points $l_{i}$ and $f_{i}$. By the definition of a trifurcation point, the removal of any point $v_{x}$ from $J$ disconnects a connected component into at least three components containing at least one vertex of $L=\left\{l_{1}, \ldots, l_{t}\right\}$. Therefore, by Lemma 3 of [BR06, p. 121],

$$
\begin{equation*}
|L| \geq 2+\left|T_{m}\right| \tag{4.4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Every member of $\left\{L_{1}, \ldots, L_{t}\right\}$ must contain an element of $\left(\omega^{I_{m+n+2 R_{0}}}\right)_{\left(I_{m+n+2 R_{0}}\right)^{c}}$, so by (4.4.25)

$$
\left|\omega_{\left(I_{m+n+4 R_{0}}\right) \backslash\left(I_{m+n+2 R_{0}}\right)}\right| \geq\left|\left(\omega^{I_{m+n+2 R_{0}}}\right)_{I_{m+n+2 R_{0}} c}\right| \geq 2+\left|T_{m}\right| .
$$

Since $\tilde{P}_{H}$ is translation invariant, the expected number of points in a region is proportional to its Lebesgue measure, so the left hand side is proportional to $2 R_{0}\left(2 m+2 n+4 R_{0}\right)$. This is a contradiction because $T_{m} \in \mathcal{O}\left(m^{2}\right) \backslash o\left(m^{2}\right)$ as we found earlier.

### 4.4.5 The DLR equations

We can now prove that $P=\tilde{P}\left(\cdot \mid\{\emptyset\}^{c}\right)$ is a Delaunay random cluster measure. We use the uniqueness of the infinite connected component to construct events which localise $N_{c c}^{\Delta}$ and whose probability approaches 1 . We also make use of the events $\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}}$ introduced in [DDG12], which localises the Hamiltonian. Combining these events allows us to use the DLR equations for $C_{m}^{\Delta}$ and the local convergence to show that $P$ also satisfies the DLR equations.

The following statement summarises [DDG12, Proposition 5.4] and the discussion that precedes it. The precise definition of $\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}}$ and the values of $n_{\Delta}$ and $m$ are given in Appendix A for reference.

Proposition 4.4.19. There exist constants $n_{\Delta}$ and $m$, depending on the matrix $M$ and the constants given in $(R)$, such that for $n \geq n_{\Delta}$ there are events $\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}} \in \mathcal{F}_{\hat{\Lambda}_{n} \backslash \Delta}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}:=\bigcup_{n \geq n_{\Delta}} \hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}} \subset \Omega_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}} \text { with } \partial \Delta(\omega) \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{n} \text { when } \omega \in \hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}}, \tag{4.4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\hat{\Lambda}_{n}:=\Lambda_{n+(2 n+1) m}$. Moreover, $P\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}\right)=1$ for all $P \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ with $P(\{\emptyset\})=0$.
It is implied by (4.4.27) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)=H_{\Delta, \omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{n} \backslash \Delta}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right) \text { when } \omega \in \hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}} . \tag{4.4.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $G \in \mathcal{G}$ we define $h_{j}(G):=\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j} \backslash \Delta}, E_{j}\right)$ where

$$
E_{j}:=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
e \in E \cap \operatorname{Del}_{2}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j}}\right) & \begin{array}{c}
\exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j} \backslash \Delta}\right) \text { with } e \subset \tau \\
\text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Lambda_{j} \backslash \Delta
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

This definition ensures that $h_{j}(G)=h_{j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}\right)=h_{j}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$ and $h_{j}(G) \nearrow G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$. We can then define the events (when $\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{p} \subset \Lambda_{j}$ )

$$
W_{p, j}:=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G} & \begin{array}{c}
\text { At most one connected component of } \\
h_{j}(G) \text { intersects } \Delta_{2 R_{0}} \text { and } \hat{\Lambda}_{p}^{c}
\end{array}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

and

$$
A_{p}:=\left\{G=(\omega, E) \in \mathcal{G} \mid \delta(\tau)<R_{0} \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \hat{\Lambda}_{p}}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega)\right\} .
$$

Notice that $\mathbb{1}_{W_{p, j}}(G)=\mathbb{1}_{W_{p, j}}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}\right)=\mathbb{1}_{W_{p, j}}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$, and by Corollary 4.1.2 $\mathbb{1}_{A_{p}}(G)=\mathbb{1}_{A_{p}}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}\right)$.

Lemma 4.4.20. $\lim _{p \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{j \rightarrow \infty} \tilde{P}\left(W_{p, j}\right)=1$.


Figure 4.4: $h_{j}\left(\omega, \operatorname{Del}_{2}(\omega)\right)($ left $)$ and $\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j}}, \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Lambda_{j}}\right)\right)$ (right).

Proof.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lim _{p \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{j \rightarrow \infty} \tilde{P}\left(W_{p, j}\right) & =\tilde{P}\left(\bigcup_{p \in \mathbb{N}} \bigcap_{j>p} W_{p, j}\right) \\
& =\tilde{P}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \text { has at most one infinite cc intersecting } \Delta_{2 R_{0}}\right) \\
& \geq \tilde{P}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \text { has at most one infinite cc }\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

If the last expression is not equal to one, then with positive probability there are at least two infinite connected components of $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta}$. If so, then there exists a region $\Delta^{\prime}$ such that with positive probability $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta^{\prime}}$ has at least two infinite connected components which contain points in $\omega^{\Delta^{\prime}}$. By the local modification property (Proposition 4.4.16), $E^{\Delta^{\prime}}=\emptyset$ occurs simultaneously with positive probability, which means that there would be at least two infinite connected components in $G$, which contradicts Proposition 4.4.18.

Lemma 4.4.21. $\tilde{P}\left(A_{p}\right)=1$ for all $p$, and $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} C_{n}^{\Delta}\left(A_{p}\right)=1$.
Proof. $\tilde{P}\left(A_{p}\right)=1$ is a consequence of Lemma 4.4.14 with $\hat{\Lambda}_{p}$ replacing $\Delta$. For the second statement note that

$$
\Delta \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{p} \Longrightarrow\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: \hat{\Lambda}_{p}+x \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\} \subset\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: \Delta+x \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\}
$$

and so

$$
C_{n}^{\Delta}\left(A_{p}\right) \geq C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(A_{p}\right) \xrightarrow{n \rightarrow \infty} 1 .
$$

by (HCC).
The following proposition expresses how the events $\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, p}^{\mathrm{cr}}, W_{p, j}$ and $A_{p}$ localise the dependency of the finite volume distributions $C_{\Delta, G}$ on $G$.

Proposition 4.4.22. Suppose $p$ and $j$ are such that $\Delta \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{p}$ and $\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \oplus 2 R_{0} \subset$ $\Lambda_{j}$. Then there exists an $\mathcal{A}_{\Lambda_{j}}$-measurable function $\mathbf{Z}_{\Delta, p, j}: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow[0, \infty]$ such that $\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)=\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta, p, j}(G)$ for all $G \in W_{p, j} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{c r}^{\Delta, p} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap A_{p}$.
Furthermore, there exists a kernel $C_{\Delta, p, j}: \mathcal{G} \times M(\mathcal{G}) \rightarrow[0, \infty]$ such that for all $G \in W_{p, j} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{c r}^{\Delta, p} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap A_{p}$ and all $\mathcal{A}_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}$-measurable functions $f$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\Delta, p, j}(G, f)=C_{\Delta, p, j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}, f\right)=C_{\Delta, G}(f) . \tag{4.4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By (4.4.28), $H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)=H_{\Delta, \omega_{\Lambda_{p} \backslash \Delta}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)$ for $\Pi_{\Delta}$-almost all $\omega^{\prime}$. Since $\psi$ satisfies (HCC), if $H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty$, then $\operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)$ is equal to

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
e \in \operatorname{Del}_{2, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) & \begin{array}{c}
\exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}\left(\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}} \backslash \Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) \\
\text { with } e \subset \tau \text { and } B(\tau) \subset \Delta_{2 R_{0}}
\end{array} \tag{4.4.30}
\end{array}\right\},
$$

and therefore if $\tilde{\mu}_{\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}}, \omega^{\prime}}$ is the type drawing mechanism on the set (4.4.30) then

$$
\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)=\int q^{N_{c c}^{\mathrm{A}}\left(G^{\left.\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)} \tilde{\mu}_{\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}}, \omega^{\prime}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega_{\Lambda_{p}}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) . . . . . . .\right.}
$$

Now let

$$
\hat{E}_{p}=\left\{\begin{array}{l|l}
e \in E_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}} & B(\tau) \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{p} \oplus 2 R_{0} \backslash \Delta \text { for all } \\
\tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3}\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \oplus 2 R_{0}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) \text { satisfying } e \subset \tau
\end{array}\right\} .
$$

We claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta}(G)=\int q^{N \Delta c\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right.} \tilde{\mu}_{\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}, \omega^{\prime}}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right) \tag{4.4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which case the right hand side is a suitable definition of $\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta, p, j}(G)$. If
$H_{\Delta, \omega}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)<\infty$ and $G \in A_{p}$, then by (HCC)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta(\tau)<R_{0} \text { for all } \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right) . \tag{4.4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.4.32) and the fact that $G \in W_{p, j}$ we can conclude that

$$
N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)=N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)-N_{c c}\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right)\right),
$$

since

1. $\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}$ contains all points which are adjacent to $\left(\omega_{\Delta c} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)^{\Delta}$ in $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup$ $\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$, and
2. Adding any combination of points and edges from $G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$ to $\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$ cannot join two connected components which intersect $\left(\omega_{\Delta^{c}} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)^{\Delta}=\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta} \cup \omega^{\prime}\right)^{\Delta}$.

Note that this is a similar argument to that made in [DH15, Proposition 4.3.1]. Finally, when (4.4.32) is true and $f$ is $\hat{\Lambda}_{p}$-measurable,

$$
f\left(G^{\mathbb{R}^{2}, \Delta} \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)=f\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right),
$$

and so the function

$$
\begin{array}{r}
C_{\Delta, p, j}(G, f):=\mathrm{Z}_{\Delta, p, j}(G)^{-1} \int f\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right) q^{N_{c c}^{\Delta}\left(\left(\omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}, \hat{E}_{p}\right) \cup\left(\omega^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)\right)} \\
\tilde{\mu}_{\omega_{\Delta_{2 R_{0}}, \omega^{\prime}}}\left(\mathrm{d} E^{\prime}\right) e^{-H_{\Delta, \omega_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}}\left(\omega^{\prime}\right)} \Pi_{\Delta}^{z}\left(\mathrm{~d} \omega^{\prime}\right),
\end{array}
$$

satisfies the requirements.
Corollary 4.4.23. Let $\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta}:=\left\{G \in \mathcal{G} \mid \mathrm{Z}_{\Delta, p, j}(G) \in(0, \infty)\right\} \in \mathcal{A}_{\Lambda_{j}}$. Then

$$
\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta} \cap W_{p, j} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{c r}^{\Delta, p} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap A_{p}=\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta} \cap W_{p, j} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{c r}^{\Delta, p} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap A_{p} .
$$

Proposition 4.4.24. $P:=\tilde{P}\left(\cdot \mid\{\emptyset\}^{c}\right) \in \mathscr{P}_{\Theta}$ is a Delaunay random cluster measure.

Proof. Let $f: \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ be a bounded local function and $\Delta \in \mathbb{R}^{2}$. Choose $p \geq n_{\Delta}$ and $j$ large enough that $f$ is $\mathcal{A}_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}$-measurable, $\Delta \subset \hat{\Lambda}_{p}$, and $\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \oplus 2 R_{0} \subset \Lambda_{j}$.

Let $\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}}=\bigcup_{n=n_{\Delta}}^{p} \hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, n}^{\mathrm{cr}} \in \mathcal{F}_{\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \backslash \Delta}$. It is sufficient to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}=\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) \tilde{P}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) . \tag{4.4.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

To see this, we note that $\emptyset \notin \hat{\Omega}_{\Delta}^{\mathrm{cr}}$, and so (4.4.33) is equivalent to

$$
\int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} P=\int_{\mathcal{G}_{\star}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c \mathrm{c}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) P\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right),
$$

and by Proposition 4.4.19 and Lemma 4.4.20,

$$
\lim _{p \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{j \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}\right)=1,
$$

which implies

$$
\int f \mathrm{~d} P=\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) P\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)
$$

Taking $f \equiv 1$ yields $P\left(\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\Delta}\right)=1$, which finishes the proof.
To prove (4.4.33), let $n$ be large enough that $\hat{\Lambda}_{p} \subset \Lambda_{n}$. Then $x \in \Lambda_{n}^{\circ}=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: \hat{\Lambda}_{p}+x \subset \Lambda_{n}\right\} \Longrightarrow \Delta \subset \Lambda_{n}-x$ and so by Proposition 4.2.6,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G}=\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\perp} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) C_{\Lambda_{n}-x, \theta_{x} G}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \\
& \Longrightarrow \int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}=\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\mathcal{S}_{*} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The integrand on the left hand side is $\mathcal{A}_{\Lambda_{j}}$-measurable, so applying the local convergence in Proposition 4.4.13 yields

$$
\int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\widehat{\Delta}} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} \gamma_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Now we apply the local convergence to the right hand side as well, after manipulating the expression with the help of Lemma 4.4.21, Proposition 4.4.22
and Corollary 4.4.23.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c r} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} f \mathrm{~d} \tilde{P}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\mathcal{G}_{*}^{\otimes} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c r} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j} \cap A_{p}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) . \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{\mathrm{cr}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j} \cap A_{p}} C_{\Delta, p, j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}^{\prime}, f\right) C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) . \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\left.\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c r}}<{ }_{c \mid} \times \mathcal{E}\right)\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, p, j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}^{\prime}, f\right) C_{n}^{\hat{\Lambda}_{p}}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \text {. } \\
& =\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega_{\Delta}^{\text {cr }}, \leq p} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, p, j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}^{\prime}, f\right) \tilde{P}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) . \\
& =\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*, p, j}^{\Delta} \cap\left(\Omega_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c r} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j} \cap A_{p}} C_{\Delta, p, j}\left(G_{\Lambda_{j}}^{\prime}, f\right) \tilde{P}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) \text {. } \\
& =\int_{\mathcal{G}_{*} \cap\left(\hat{\Omega}_{\Delta, \leq p}^{c \mathrm{c}} \times \mathcal{E}\right) \cap W_{p, j}} C_{\Delta, G^{\prime}}(f) \tilde{P}\left(\mathrm{~d} G^{\prime}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

## Chapter 5

## Outlook

To conclude, we proved in chapter 3 that a particular Delaunay Potts model with interactions between the triples of points which make up the triangles of the Delaunay triangulation exhibits a phase transition for large activities and large values of $\beta$ (which plays a similar role to the inverse temperature). In chapter 4 we proved that an infinite volume Delaunay random cluster model exists when the background potential satisfies two hard-core conditions and the edge weights are bounded away from 0 and 1 . We briefly outline here some future research directions.

As mentioned in the introduction and at the beginning of chapter 4, the main motivation for introducing the infinite volume Delaunay random cluster model is to eventually obtain a uniqueness result for the corresponding Delaunay continuum Potts model via a random cluster representation. The analogous result for the Widom-Rowlinson model was obtained using a random cluster representation and the method of disagreement percolation [HTH19]. The next step in our case is to prove that such a random cluster representation exists, which would likely provide a connection between Delaunay continuum Potts measures with background and type potentials $\psi$ and $\phi$ and Delaunay random cluster measures with the hyperedge potential $\psi$ and edge weights $p(e)=e^{1-\phi(e)}$. To show uniqueness we would then have to investigate the percolative properties of Delaunay random cluster measures.

The Delaunay random cluster measures in chapter 4 were defined as edge percolation models; each edge in the Delaunay graph is declared to be either open or closed. It should be straightforward to extend the existence
result to a hyperedge percolation model in which each triangle in $\mathrm{Del}_{3}$ is declared to be either open or closed instead. Such a model would be the infinite volume analogue of the finite volume distribution given in definition 2.3.1. The set of wired boundary conditions in this case are the elements $G=(\omega, E)$ for which $\operatorname{Del}_{3}(\omega) \backslash \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \subset E$. Wired boundary conditions are also discussed in remark 4.3.2.

Another direction would be to investigate the existence of phase transitions for other geometric continuum Potts models. One could consider for instance models in which Voronoi cells interact with one another. In these models the hyperedge potential acts on pairs of points $\{\boldsymbol{x}, \boldsymbol{y}\} \subset \boldsymbol{\omega}$ whose Voronoi cells share a face. The interaction could depend on the marks of $\boldsymbol{x}$ and $\boldsymbol{y}$ as well as the attributes of their Voronoi cells $\operatorname{Vor}_{\omega}(x)$ and $\operatorname{Vor}_{\omega}(y)$ such as geometry of the face they share or their relative volumes. One could also consider models in which the hyperedge potential acts on neighbouring pairs of Voronoi cells or Delaunay triangles.

## Appendix A

Proposition A.0.1. For $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2},\left|\omega^{\Delta}\right|<\infty$ for $\Pi^{z}$-almost all $\omega$.
Proof. Since $\omega$ is locally finite $\Pi^{z}$-almost surely, if $\left|\omega^{\Delta}\right|=\infty$ then there exists a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \geq 1} \subset \operatorname{Del}_{1, \Delta}(\omega)$ with $\left|x_{n}\right| \rightarrow \infty$. In this case

$$
\begin{aligned}
\omega \in A: & =\left\{\omega \in \Omega: \begin{array}{c}
\forall n \in \mathbb{N} \exists \tau \in \operatorname{Del}_{3, \Delta}(\omega) \text { with } \delta(\tau) \geq n, \\
\stackrel{\circ}{ }(\tau) \cap \omega=\emptyset \text { and } B(\tau) \cap \Delta \neq \emptyset
\end{array}\right\} \\
& \subset \bigcap_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \bigcup_{m \geq n} \bigcup_{x \in \mathbb{Q}^{2} \cap \Delta \oplus(m+1)}\{\stackrel{\circ}{B}(x, m) \cap \omega=\emptyset\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the first Borel-Cantelli Lemma, $\Pi^{z}\left(\left|\omega^{\Delta}\right|=\infty\right) \leq \Pi^{z}(A)=0$ since

$$
\Pi^{z}\left(\bigcup_{x \in \mathbb{Q}^{2} \cap \Delta \oplus(m+1)}\{\stackrel{\circ}{B}(x, m) \cap \omega=\emptyset\}\right) \leq \sum_{x \in \mathbb{Q}^{2} \cap \Delta \oplus(m+1)} e^{-z \pi m^{2}}<\infty
$$

Lemma A.0.2. Let $\delta(\tau)$ and $p(\tau)$ denote the circumradius and perimeter of the triangle $\tau$. Then

$$
\delta(\tau) \geq \frac{p(\tau)}{3 \sqrt{3}}
$$

with equality when $\tau$ is equilateral.
Proof. Let $a, b$ and $c$ denote the side lengths of $\tau$ which are opposite to the
angles $A, B$ and $C$ respectively. By the law of sines,

$$
\begin{align*}
2 \delta(\tau)=\frac{a}{\sin (A)}=\frac{b}{\sin (B)}=\frac{c}{\sin (C)} \\
\Longrightarrow \sin (A)+\sin (B)+\sin (C)=\frac{a+b+c}{2 \delta(\tau)}=\frac{p(\tau)}{2 \delta(\tau)} \tag{A.0.1}
\end{align*}
$$

Now by Jensen's inequality,

$$
\frac{1}{3}(\sin (A)+\sin (B)+\sin (C)) \leq \sin \left(\frac{A+B+C}{3}\right)=\sin \left(\frac{\pi}{3}\right)=\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}
$$

with equality only when $A=B=C$, in which case the triangle is equilateral. Combining this with equation (A.0.1) yields the result.

## Definitions used in Section 4.4.5

The following excerpt is from [DDG12, page 664-665]. In our case $d=2$, and we use the notation $\hat{\Omega}_{\Lambda, n}^{\mathrm{cr}}$ instead of $\hat{\Omega}_{\mathrm{cr}}^{\Lambda, n}$. The authors define $L_{m}:=$ $\{-n, \ldots, n\}^{d}$.

Let $\ell_{R}, n_{R}, \delta_{R}$ be the constants introduced in condition (R). Also, let $\delta_{-}$and $\delta_{+}$the diameters of the largest open ball in C and of the smallest closed ball containing C, respectively. Fix an integer $m \geq 6 \ell_{R} \delta_{+} / \delta_{-}$. For each $n \geq 1$, we decompose the parallelotope $\hat{\Lambda}_{n}:=\Lambda_{n+(n+1) m}$ into the $(2 m+1)^{d}$ translates $\Lambda_{n}^{k}:=\Lambda_{n}+(2 n+$ 1) $M k$ of $\Lambda_{n}$, where $k \in L_{m}$. For any $\Lambda \Subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$, let $n_{\Lambda} \geq 1$ be the smallest number with $\Lambda_{n_{\Lambda}} \supset \Lambda$ and $n_{\Lambda} \geq \delta_{R} / 6 \delta^{+}$. For all $n \geq n_{\Lambda}$ we consider the events

$$
\hat{\Omega}_{\mathrm{cr}}^{\Lambda, n}=\left\{\min _{0 \neq k \in L_{m}} N_{\Lambda_{n}^{k}}>n_{R}\right\} \in \mathcal{F}_{\hat{\Lambda}_{n} \backslash \Lambda}
$$

as well as $\hat{\Omega}_{\mathrm{cr}}^{\Lambda}=\bigcup_{n \geq n_{\Lambda}} \hat{\Omega}_{\mathrm{cr}}^{\Lambda, n} \in \mathcal{F}_{\Lambda^{c}}$.

## Bibliography

[AE16] Stefan Adams and Michael Eyers. Phase transitions in Delaunay Potts models. J. Stat. Phys., 162(1):162-185, 2016.
[AE19] Stefan Adams and Michael Eyers. The Widom-Rowlinson model on the Delaunay graph. Electron. J. Probab., 24:Paper No. 114, 41, 2019.
[BR06] Bela Bollobás and Oliver Riordan. Percolation. Cambridge University Press, 2006.
[CCK95] J. T. Chayes, L. Chayes, and R. Kotecký. The analysis of the Widom-Rowlinson model by stochastic geometric methods. Comm. Math. Phys., 172(3):551-569, 1995.
[DDG12] David Dereudre, Remy Drouilhet, and Hans-Otto Georgii. Existence of Gibbsian point processes with geometry-dependent interactions. Probab. Theory Related Fields, 153(3-4):643-670, 2012.
[DH15] David Dereudre and Pierre Houdebert. Infinite volume continuum random cluster model. Electronic Journal of Probability, 20, 2015.
[Dob68] R. L. Dobrušin. Description of a random field by means of conditional probabilities and conditions for its regularity. Teor. Verojatnost. i Primenen, 13:201-229, 1968.
[DS89] Jean-Dominique Deuschel and Daniel W. Stroock. Large deviations, volume 137 of Pure and Applied Mathematics. Academic Press, Inc., Boston, MA, 1989.
[DVJ08] D. J. Daley and D. Vere-Jones. An introduction to the theory of point processes. Vol. II. Probability and its Applications (New York). Springer, New York, second edition, 2008. General theory and structure.
[DZ98] Amir Dembo and Ofer Zeitouni. Large deviations techniques and applications, volume 38 of Applications of Mathematics (New York). Springer-Verlag, New York, second edition, 1998.
[Eye14] Michael Eyers. On Delaunay Random Cluster Models. PhD thesis, University of Warwick, September 2014. Available at http://wrap.warwick.ac.uk/67144/.
[For72] C. M. Fortuin. On the random-cluster model. III. The simple random-cluster model. Physica, 59:545-570, 1972.
[Geo94] Hans-Otto Georgii. Large deviations and the equivalence of ensembles for Gibbsian particle systems with superstable interaction. Probab. Theory Related Fields, 99(2):171-195, 1994.
[Geo11] Hans-Otto Georgii. Gibbs measures and phase transitions, volume 9 of De Gruyter Studies in Mathematics. Walter de Gruyter \& Co., Berlin, second edition, 2011.
[GH96] H.-O. Georgii and O. Häggström. Phase transition in continuum Potts models. Comm. Math. Phys., 181(2):507-528, 1996.
[GZ93] Hans-Otto Georgii and Hans Zessin. Large deviations and the maximum entropy principle for marked point random fields. Probab. Theory Related Fields, 96(2):177-204, 1993.
[Ham80] J. M. Hammersley. A generalization of McDiarmid's theorem for mixed Bernoulli percolation. Math. Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc., 88(1):167-170, 1980.
[Hou17] Pierre Houdebert. Percolation results for the continuum random cluster model. Advances in Applied Probability, 50(1):231-244, 2017.
[HTH19] Christoph Hofer-Temmel and Pierre Houdebert. Disagreement percolation for Gibbs ball models. Stochastic Process. Appl., 129(10):3922-3940, 2019.
[Kin92] J.F.C. Kingman. Poisson Processes. Oxford Studies in Probability. Clarendon Press, 1992.
[Lis99] Vladimir D Liseikin. Grid generation methods, volume 1. Springer, 1999.
[LMP99] J. L. Lebowitz, A. Mazel, and E. Presutti. Liquid-vapor phase transitions for systems with finite-range interactions. Journal of Statistical Physics, 94(5):955-1025, Mar 1999.
[LR69] O. E. Lanford, III and D. Ruelle. Observables at infinity and states with short range correlations in statistical mechanics. Comm. Math. Phys., 13:194-215, 1969.
[LSS97] T. M. Liggett, R. H. Schonmann, and A. M. Stacey. Domination by product measures. Ann. Probab., 25(1):71-95, 1997.
[MKM78] Klaus Matthes, Johannes Kerstan, and Joseph Mecke. Infinitely divisible point processes. John Wiley \& Sons, Chichester-New YorkBrisbane, 1978. Translated from the German by B. Simon, Wiley Series in Probability and Mathematical Statistics.
[M194] Jesper Møller. Lectures on random Vorono乞̌ tessellations, volume 87 of Lecture Notes in Statistics. Springer-Verlag, New York, 1994.
[MR96] Ronald Meester and Rahul Roy. Continuum Percolation. Cambridge Tracts in Mathematics. Cambridge University Press, 1996.
[MR09] Franz Merkl and Silke W. W. Rolles. Spontaneous breaking of continuous rotational symmetry in two dimensions. Electron. J. Probab., 14:no. 57, 1705-1726, 2009.
[Nol13] William R. Nollett. Phase transitions and the random-cluster representation for Delaunay Potts models with geometry-dependent interactions. PhD thesis, University of Warwick, September 2013.
[Rus82] Lucio Russo. An approximate zero-one law. Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete, 61(1):129-139, 1982.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ In this instance the local convergence topology is the weak* topology generated by the set of local and tame real-valued functions on $\boldsymbol{\Omega}$. These are the functions which which are $\mathcal{F}_{\Delta}$-measurable and satisfy $|f(\boldsymbol{\omega})| \leq a\left|\omega_{\Delta}\right|+b$ for some $\Delta \Subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ and $a, b \in \mathbb{R}$.

